Contents

Preface xi
Guide to Sanskrit Pronunciation xiii

Part I. INTRODUCTION
INTRODUCTION 3
ABOUT THE TRANSLATION 44

Part II. THE RĀMĀYAṆA OF VĀLMĪKI
1. THE BĀLAKĀṆḌA 51
2. THE AYODHYĀKĀṆḌA 130
3. THE ARANYAKĀṆḌA 264
4. THE KIṢKINDHĀKĀṆḌA 351
5. THE SUNDARAKĀṆḌA 429
6. THE YUDDHAKĀṆḌA 537
7. THE UTTRAKĀṆḌA 728

Glossary of Important Sanskrit Words, Proper Nouns, and Epithets 857
Glossary of Weapons 867
Bibliography 869
Index 873
Introduction

What Is the Vālmiki Rāmāyana?

When contemplating a reading of the Vālmiki Rāmāyana, it might well occur to a reader unfamiliar with the work to ask, “What is a Rāmāyana, and who or what is Vālmiki?” If one were to be told that Rāmāyana is the title of a famous and influential Sanskrit epic poem of ancient India, that Vālmiki is the name of its author, and that the work is in many ways similar to epic poems like the Iliad, the Odyssey, and the Aeneid, one might then ask, “Why don’t we refer to these latter works as ‘The Homer Iliad,’ ‘The Homer Odyssey,’ and ‘The Virgil Aeneid’?” And thereby hangs a tale—or rather, many, many versions of the same tale.

The name Rāmāyana, “Rāma’s Journey,” is actually a generic term that, over the last two and a half millennia, came to be applied, either specifically or generically, to the innumerable versions of the epic’s central story that proliferated across the vast geographical, linguistic, cultural, and religious range of southern Asia from antiquity to the present day. The collectivity of these versions in poetry, prose, song, drama, cinema, and the visual arts is sometimes referred to as the Rāmakathā, “The Tale of Rāma.” Thus, although specific versions of the tale, such as those found in Sanskrit and many other languages, may use the term Rāmāyana in their titles, many others do not. Indeed, the massive diffusion of texts, art, and performance based on the Rāma story found throughout the nations of southern Asia makes the Rāmāyana, writ large, arguably one of the world’s most popular, influential, and widely circulated tales ever told. In this it can only be compared with two works that have been equally pervasive and influential, but far less variable and religiously adaptable—the Bible and the Qur’an.

The oldest surviving version of the great tale of Rāma, and the one that is doubtless the direct or indirect source of all of the hundreds and perhaps thousands of other versions of the story, is the monumental, mid–first millennium BCE epic poem in some twenty-five thousand Sanskrit couplets attributed to Vālmiki. In several respects this poem is also, as we shall see, unique among all versions of the tale.

In its own preface the text calls itself by three titles: Rāma’s Journey (rāmāyānam), The Great Tale of Sitā (sitāyāś caritaṃ mahat), and The Slaying of Paulastya (i.e., Rāvana) (paulastyaradvadhaḥ). The first title reflects the salience in the story of its hero, while the second features its heroine and the third its villain. In modernity, in order to distinguish this work from its legion of later versions, many of which are called simply Rāmāyana, scholars and others tend to name it for its author. Thus, in keeping with Sanskrit’s predilection for nominal compounds, the poem is often referred to in that language as the Vālmikirāmāyana, “Vālmiki’s
“Rāmāyaṇa.” In English we tend to separate the two parts of the compound: the name of the author and the name of his work.

Like other Rāmāyaṇas, Vālmiki’s work purports to be a poetic history of events that took place on the Indian subcontinent and on the adjacent island of Laṅkā (popularly believed to be the modern nation of Sri Lanka). Indeed, along with its reputation as a great literary composition, and like its sister epic, the Mahābhārata, it is regarded by numerous Indian commentators, as well as by the Indian literary critical tradition and many pious Hindus today, as belonging to the genre of itihāsa, “historical narrative.” Also like the Mahābhārata, but unlike most other versions of the Rāma story, Vālmiki’s epic is believed to be the work of a divinely gifted ṛṣi, “seer,” who was endowed with an infallible and omniscient vision enabling him to witness directly all the events recounted in his poem. Thus, his version of the tale is widely regarded as the first and most authentic and unfalsifiable historical account of the life of its hero, Rāma, and all the other characters—human, simian, avian, divine, and demonic—with whom his career intersects.

A unique characteristic of Vālmiki’s Rāmāyaṇa is that it is almost universally revered in the Indian literary tradition as the veritable fons et origo of the entire genre of kāvyā, “poetry,” or what we would call belles lettres: texts whose purpose, among others, is to stimulate our aesthetic sensibilities. Thus, the work is widely revered as the Ādikāvya, “The First Poem,” from which all later poetry derives, while its author is venerated as the Ādikavi, “The First Poet.” Indeed, the poem’s tale of the life of its hero, Rāma, has come down to us with a prologue in the form of a meta-narrative about exactly how Vālmiki came to learn the story of Rāma and how he was inspired to craft it into a massive musical and poetic history. In that prologue, we read that Lord Brahmā, the creator divinity himself, inspired the sage to compose the tale of Rāma in metrical verse, “to delight the heart.” In other words, in addition to its other merits, Vālmiki’s magnum opus is a grand entertainment filled with emotional scenes, romantic idylls, heroic warriors, beautiful princesses, monstrous villains, comical monkeys, and cataclysmic battles. And so, along with the innumerable subsequent retellings it has inspired throughout the countries and cultures of southern Asia, the work has both delighted and edified its audiences for millennia.

But the work is not merely a literary account of a legendary hero’s life and struggles. It also functions on two other critical levels, the devotional and the ethical. We learn at the very outset of the poem that, despite appearances, its protagonist is no ordinary human. Together with his three brothers, Bharata, Lakṣmaṇa, and Śatrughna, he is, in fact, an incarnation of one of the supreme divinities of Hinduism, Lord Viṣṇu, who takes on various earthly forms over the long, recurring cycles of cosmic time when the righteous and righteousness (dharma) itself are imperiled at the hands of some mighty, demonic being or beings who are too powerful for even the lesser gods to resist. Thus, the warrior prince and righteous monarch Rāma is regarded as one of the principal avatāras, “incarnations,” of the Supreme Being and therefore an object of veneration, worship, and devotion for hundreds of millions of Hindus worldwide from deep antiquity to the present day. In this way, Vālmiki’s epic poem is one of the earliest sacred texts of the Vaishnava tradition of Hinduism and stands at the head of
all the many Hindu versions of the Rāmāyaṇa. Although it has sometimes been superseded in the affection of many of Rāma’s bhaktas, “devotees,” by later, regional versions of the epic, Vālmīki’s Rāmāyaṇa remains a central scripture for some schools of Vaiṣṇavism to this day, and most Hindus revere both the poem and the poet. Indeed, the day traditionally regarded as Vālmīki’s birthday is a “restricted,” or optional, holiday on the Hindu calendar.

The epic narrative is constructed as a kind of morality play, an illustrative guide to righteous behavior, in the face of the most dire challenges and ethical dilemmas. At the same time, it is a grand cautionary tale of the downfall of the unrighteous, no matter how mighty they may be. Thus, the work, along with its role as a historical and literary text, functions as both a guide to moral and religious conduct (dharmaśāstra) and a political treatise on the proper exercise of kingship and governance (nitiśāstra). It fulfills these roles through the creation of (in some cases literally) towering figures whose characters and actions represent positive and negative exemplars for its audiences to emulate or to shun. In this way, the epic hero Rāma serves as the model for the ideal son, the ideal husband, the ideal warrior, and the ideal king. Thus, not only is he a god come to earth, but he is the ideal man. Other central figures serve similarly in their specific roles. The heroine, Sītā, is the ideal wife, a pativrata, a woman perfectly devoted to her husband for better or for worse. Lakṣmaṇa is the ideal younger brother, utterly faithful to his elder, Rāma. The monkey-hero Hanumān emerges as the very paragon of selfless devotion to one’s lord. Then there is the anomalous figure of Vibhīṣaṇa, the virtuous rākṣasa brother of the epic’s villain, who abandons his family and his people to take refuge and ally himself with Rāma.

On the “dark side,” as it were, there is the monstrous, ten-headed rākṣasa king, Rāvana, a ruthless conquistador who terrorizes all creatures, even the gods themselves. Rāvana is a defiler of all sacred rites and a prolific sexual predator who rapes and abducts women throughout the three worlds until he meets his downfall at Rāma’s hands. There is also Rāvana’s sinister and terrifying son, the sorcerer-warrior Rāvaṇi Indrajit, who, through his powers of illusion and magical rites, can make himself both invisible and invincible. Rāvana’s colossal younger brother is the horrifying, if almost comically grotesque, Kumbhakarṇa, who must be aroused from his perpetual sleep to wreak havoc on Rāma’s army of semidivine monkeys (vānaras).

In opposing these sets of figures, the righteous and the unrighteous, the epic narrative establishes itself as a major episode in the grand and never-ending struggle between the forces of dharma, “good or righteousness,” and the forces of adharma, “evil or unrighteousness,” for control of the universe—a struggle that, as noted earlier, occasionally necessitates the divine intervention of the Supreme Being to resolve it in favor of dharma. In the end, once Rāma has been victorious in his battle with Rāvana and his evil minions, recovered his abducted wife, and established himself on his ancestral throne, he inaugurates a millennia-long

---

1 It should be noted that the immense popularity and influence of the Rāmāyaṇa has extended to virtually all the religious cultures of Asia, many of which do not subscribe to the avatāra theory of the Vaiṣṇava Hindus. So, in the many Jain versions of the tale, Rāma is regarded as a virtuous Jain layman; for the Buddhists of South and Southeast Asia, he is a bodhisattva, a future Buddha; and for the peoples of the Malay-Indonesian world, he is portrayed as an ideal Islamic prince.
utopian kingdom, the so-called Rāmarāya, “Kingdom of Rāma,” which lives on in the political imagination of India to this day. This morality play, reenacted annually across much of India in the Rāmlīlā, “The Play of Rāma,” a rather more cheerful popular celebration than the European Passion Play it parallels, continues to entertain and edify hundreds of millions who worship Rāma and Sītā (Sitārām). At the drama’s conclusion, vast crowds of devotees and onlookers celebrate as a giant effigy of the demonic Rāvana, packed with fireworks, is set ablaze for a glorious celebration of the triumph of good over evil.

Vālmiki’s Epic: The Text

The original Princeton University Press translation of the Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa (PVR), which forms the basis of the present volume, is based, with a number of revisions and emendations, on the seven-volume critical edition of the poem produced by the scholars of the Rāmāyaṇa Department of the Oriental Institute of Baroda, India, between 1960 and 1975 under the general editorship of a series of distinguished experts in the field of Sanskrit epic studies. But before we delve into the translation, it will perhaps be helpful for the reader to understand exactly what the critical edition is, how it relates to the many other published editions (and their corresponding translations) of the poem, and something of the textual history of this remarkable work.

The poem’s upodghāta, “prologue,” which presents an account of its creation and early performance, describes it as having been composed by the sage Vālmiki, who subsequently taught it to two of his disciples, the twin bards Lava and Kuśa, who turn out actually to be Rāma’s long-lost children. They have been living, unbeknownst to their father, in exile with their banished mother, Sītā, in the sage’s ashram. The brothers literally take their show on the road and sing the poem, with musical accompaniment, on the highways and byways of India until, as the tale goes, they present it as a command performance at their father’s court, where they are recognized as his long-lost sons.

Such is the legend. But it is not implausible that, at least in its earliest stages, the work was orally composed as a sort of bardic lay, transmitted aurally from master to disciple and performed aloud to popular audiences, the vast majority of whom would almost certainly have been illiterate and thus unable to imbibe the work in any other way even had it been available in written form. Nonetheless, as the celebrity of the poem spread in antiquity, it would surely at an early date have entered into the rich and emerging manuscript culture of the Indian subcontinent. And it is here that problems arise with regard to our efforts to

2 Throughout the translation, despite our admiration for and gratitude to the editors and scholars who produced the Baroda critical edition for their monumental achievement, we, as translators, have occasionally found ourselves in disagreement with some of their specific choices. In these cases, we have emended the critical text in accordance with our own readings of the manuscript evidence. These emendations are particularly noticeable in the seventh book of the epic, the Uttarakāṇḍa. There, in keeping with our reading of what we believe to be compelling manuscript evidence, we have inserted two relatively lengthy passages that were relegated to the appendices of the volume by the editor of this volume. These passages are to be found at PVR 7: 348–359 and 421–424. All these emendations are marked as such in the present edition. Readers interested in our rationale for these emendations can consult the introductions and notes to the relevant passages in the various volumes of the PVR.
understand what the text of the poem was like in its earliest form or forms. For one thing, orally composed and performed tales, as we know from much more recent examples, may change to greater or lesser extents in different performances by the same bard and in performances by different singers, either through failures of memory or as a result of improvisation in response to different times, places, occasions, and audience reactions.³

Then, too, there are similar problems with manuscripts depending on the diligence and competence of the copyists. Such issues are particularly weighty in the case of the scribal transmission of Sanskrit texts in India because Sanskrit, although a highly conservative and grammatically regulated language for the most part, has never had a single principal script in which it was written, unlike, say, Greek or Latin. Thus, as the manuscript tradition of Vālmiki’s Rāmāyaṇa developed over time, the work came to be copied in a wide variety of regional scripts from all parts of India, from the Śāradā script of Kashmir to the Grantha and Malayalam scripts of the deep south and the scripts of many others in between. These various regional scripts in turn contributed to a sort of graphic game of “telephone” in which scribes copying a manuscript from one script into another for their local audiences might well make significant errors or alterations.

As a result of these factors and the very popularity of the work itself, the poem has undergone numerous and complex textual changes that have resulted in the formation of a number of primary and secondary recensions, or textual variants. Basically, there are two large recensional versions—manuscripts from northern India in northern scripts and manuscripts from southern India in southern scripts—along with many manuscripts in the widely written and printed Devanāgarī script. The textual differences between these two large recensions are significant: in a word-for-word, verse-for-verse, passage-for-passage comparison between the northern and southern versions, only about one-third of the text is textually identical in the two versions.

Even this north-south division does not fully reflect the textual variation of the Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa. Within each major recension, there are further regional sub-recensions. Modern printed editions of the poem represent one or another of the recensions or sub-recensions. Thus, there is Gaspare Gorresio’s edition of the Gauḍiya (Bengal) recension, Vishva Bandhu’s “Lahore” edition of the northwestern recension, and the numerous editions of the southern recensions such as the “Kumbakonam” edition and those of the Gujarati Printing Press, the Nirnaya Sagara Press, the Gita Press, and the Venkateshwara Steam Press. All existing translations of the Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa, with the exception of ours and the subsequent one of Bibek Debroy, are based on one or another of the existing published editions.⁴ For this reason, readers familiar with other published editions or translations based on them will note that, in many places, ours is different from those they may have read and been led to believe are the “authentic” text of the epic.

Yet another factor here is the question of time and the perishability of manuscript media in South and Southeast Asia. Sanskrit manuscripts, depending on

³ For the classic study of oral epic composition and transmission, see Lord 2000.
⁴ Debroy 2017.
period and region, have been written on a variety of media, including prepared palm leaves, birch bark, and various forms of paper. These materials have generally had relatively short life spans in the hot and humid environment of monsoon Asia. Manuscripts succumb to mold, insects, general neglect, and even, in some cases, a form of pious destruction: religious texts like the Rāmāyaṇa have sometimes been consigned to bodies of water in the practice of visarjana, “release,” of sacred images, icons, or texts.

The plethora of recensional variants and the loss of perishable manuscripts over time thus presents the scholar of the Rāmāyaṇa with a serious problem when it comes to understanding what the poem may have been like in its early stages. The core of the work appears to have been originally a product of the middle of the first millennium BCE, but because of the factors just mentioned, its oldest known manuscripts are dated no earlier than the twelfth or thirteenth centuries CE, leaving a period of some seventeen centuries from which we can recover virtually no written record of the poem.

This is where the critical edition of the poem comes in. Basically, what the scholars at the Oriental Institute of Baroda did was to select exemplars from the various recensions and sub-recensions and compare them in an attempt to determine what might be the oldestrecoverable readings. Using established, scientific philological principles—such as privileging text that is common to both the north and south; giving preference to the south, which gives evidence of being the older of the two recensions; and, when there is disagreement between the two recensions, rejecting passages that appear in only one recension—the Baroda scholars reconstructed an archetype of the existing manuscripts of Vālmīki’s epic. The final product of such a process is, of course, a text found nowhere else, but one that is nevertheless a scientific attempt to approximate, we must stress, not the original Rāmāyaṇa—a goal that is beyond the power of scholarship—but the archetype of the existing manuscripts, taking us perhaps to a reconstructed stage in the text’s history somewhere in the medieval period. We should note that, because of the excision of verses and passages that did not meet the editorial criteria of the creators of the critical edition, this text is somewhat shorter than the other printed editions.

The Epic: Its Structure and Its Narrative

As the poem has come down to us in all of its recensions and variants, it is a very lengthy narrative account of the life of its hero, Rāma, and of those with whom he interacted during his long and often challenging career. This narrative is presented throughout in metrical Sanskrit couplets. These are overwhelmingly of the type known as śloka or anuṣṭubh, verses of thirty-two syllables divided up into four equal pādas, “metrical quarters,” consisting of eight syllables each. This is an enormously popular meter in many genres of Sanskrit text—poetic, scientific, didactic, religious, and so on. As in the other great Sanskrit epic, the Mahābhārata, these verses are sometimes varied with an assortment of

5 For those who may be interested in the principles adopted by the editors of the critical edition, see the first volume of Bhatt 1960: xxxiv. Further information can be found in the introductions to each volume of the series.
The poem is divided into seven discrete kāṇḍas, “books,” of varying length, which in turn are divided into a varying number of sargas. The chapters are numbered sequentially in each book starting from one, while each of the books has its own title, which sometimes differs in various recensions. The books are generally named for stages in the life of the epic hero, for the locales in which the principal actions are set, or for those actions themselves. The books are:

The Bālakāṇḍa, “The Book of the Child”
The Ayodhyākāṇḍa, “The Book of Ayodhya”
The Aranyakāṇḍa, “The Book of the Forest”
The Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa, “The Book of Kiṣkindhā”
The Sundarakāṇḍa, “The Beautiful Book”
The Yuddhakāṇḍa, “The Book of the War”
The Uttarakāṇḍa, “The Last Book”

The Bālakāṇḍa

The epic’s first book begins with an upodghāta, “prologue,” which provides a highly compressed account of the epic narrative and tells how its author came to compose the poem and, in the process, create the very genre of poetry. It also describes how the work was first transmitted and performed and provides a brief table of its contents. According to this framing narrative, the sage Vālmiki, while hosting a visit from the celebrated divine seer Nārada, asks his guest if there is any truly great, heroic, and righteous man living in their world. After a moment’s thought, the seer responds with a brief, seventy-two-verse laudatory description of Rāma, including the major events of his career and the utopian conditions that prevailed during his idyllic eleven-thousand-year reign. Although this concise and decidedly prosaic narrative makes no explicit reference to Rāma’s status as an incarnation of Lord Viṣṇu, it does conclude with a brief statement of the worldly, spiritual, and heavenly rewards that accrue to anyone who reads, recites, or hears the tale of the hero, an example of what is known in Sanskrit as a phalasruti, “fruitful hearing,” that is regularly found at the end of Hindu religious texts.

Following Nārada’s departure, Vālmiki wanders into the woodlands to take his ritual bath. There, as he raptly watches a pair of mating sārasa cranes, a tribal hunter emerges from the forest and kills the male bird. In an access of compassion for the grieving female, the sage curses the hunter, the words pouring from his mouth in metrical form suitable for musical rendition and accompaniment. Upon his return to his ashram, he is visited by the creator god, Lord Brahmac, who tells him that he had granted the sage the gifts of poetic inspiration and clairvoyance and commissions him to compose a great and moving poem about the life of Rāma, greatly expanding upon the concise version of it he had heard

---

6 In the Mahābhārata, these sections are called adhyāyas.
7 Manuscripts of the northern recension generally entitle the sixth book the Laṅkākāṇḍa, “The Book of Laṅkā.”
from Nārada. Vālmīki teaches the poem to his disciples, the twin sons of Rāma and Sītā, and the boys, acting as bards, sing it on the highways and byways of the region until, at last, they perform it before their father, King Rāma, who recognizes them as his long-lost sons and heirs.

The epic story proper begins in the fifth sarga of the kāṇḍa. It tells us of the mighty and prosperous kingdom of Kosala, whose king, the wise and powerful Daśaratha, rules from the beautiful and impregnable city of Ayodhyā. The king possesses all that a man could desire except a son and heir. On the advice of his ministers, and with the somewhat obscure intervention of the legendary sage Rṣyaśṛṅga, the king performs a pair of sacrifices, as a consequence of which four splendid sons are born to him by his three principal wives. These sons, Rāma, Bharata, Lakṣmaṇa, and Śatrughna, we are given to understand, are infused with varying portions of the essence of the Supreme Lord Viṣṇu, who, in response to a plea from the gods, has agreed to be born as a man in order to destroy a violent and otherwise invincible demon, the powerful king of the rākṣasas, Rāvaṇa. To assist him in this vital mission, the vedic gods also incarnate themselves in the form of immensely powerful monkeys, gifted with human speech and able to take on any form at will. The mighty ten-headed rākṣasa has long been oppressing and assaulting the gods and holy sages with impunity, for, by virtue of a boon that he has received through his austerities from Lord Brahmā, he is invulnerable to all supernatural beings. This last point is critical to our understanding of Vālmīki’s version of the Rāma story and it is why, unlike in many later, more floridly devotional versions of the tale, Viṣṇu must not only take on the appearance of a man to accomplish his mission but also remain essentially ignorant of his own true, divine nature, so as not to violate Brahmā’s boon.

Daśaratha’s sons pass a pleasant and uneventful childhood, which the poet glosses over in a few brief couplets. There we learn that the four brothers basically divide themselves into two pairs, the foremost being Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, with Bharata and Śatrughna forming a somewhat secondary pair. In each pair, the older brother is dominant while the younger functions largely as a sort of esquire, as it were, to his elder.

One day, however, when the princes are still mere adolescents, the powerful and irascible sage Viśvāmitra arrives at court and asks the king to lend him his eldest and favorite son, Rāma, for the task of destroying a pair of demons, the rākṣasas Mārica and Subāhu, who have been harassing his ashram and disrupting his vedic sacrifices. With great reluctance, and only out of fear of the sage’s curse, the doting king permits Rāma to go. Then, accompanied by the sage and his inseparable companion, his younger brother Lakṣmaṇa, the prince sets out for the sage’s ashram. On their journey, Rāma is told—in response to his questions—a number of stories from Indian mythology that are associated with the sites through which the party passes. At one point, on the orders of the sage, Rāma somewhat hesitantly kills a terrifying rākṣasa woman (rākṣasi) named Tātaṅkā and, as a reward for his valor, receives from the sage a set of supernatural weapon-spells. At last the princes reach the hermitage of Viśvāmitra, where, with his newly acquired weapons, Rāma puts an end to the sages’ harassment by the rākṣasas, killing one and hurling the other, stunned, to a great distance.

But it turns out that Viśvāmitra has another plan in mind for his protégé. Rather than returning directly to Ayodhyā, he takes the brothers along with him
to the city of Mithilā, where Janaka, the king of the country of Videha, is said to be in possession of a massive and mighty bow that had once belonged to the great god Lord Śiva. No earthly prince has ever been able to wield or even lift this divine weapon, and the king has set this feat as the bride-price for the hand of his beautiful foster daughter, Sītā, the daughter of the earth goddess. After arriving at Mithilā, Rāma easily lifts the bow and breaks it with a thunderous crash. Marriages are then arranged between the sons of Daśaratha and the daughters and nieces of Janaka. Prior to the ceremonies, the text provides a fifteen-chapter, well-known mini-saga of the early career of Viśvāmitra, his rivalry with the sage Vasiṣṭha, and his accomplishment, through long and fierce austerities, of the all-but-impossible feat of transforming himself from a kṣatriya king into a brahman-seer.

The weddings are celebrated at Mithilā with great festivity, and the wedding party returns to Ayodhyā. On the way, Rāma meets and faces down the fierce warrior-brahman, Rāma Jāmadagnya (Paraśurāma), the legendary nemesis of the warrior class who, like Rāma himself, is regarded as an avatāra of Lord Viṣṇu. At last the brothers and their brides settle in Ayodhyā, where they live in peace and contentment. The kāṇḍa thus serves as a sort of bildungsroman of the epic hero, outlining his education into traditional lore, his initiation into the secrets of supernatural weaponry, his boyhood feats, and his marriage.

The Ayodhyākāṇḍa

The second book of the epic is set, as the name suggests, mostly in the city of Ayodhyā. Here we find that, in the absence of Prince Bharata, who is away on a visit to his maternal family, Daśaratha has decided to retire from the kingship and consecrate Rāma as prince regent in his stead. The announcement of Rāma’s impending consecration is greeted with general rejoicing, and elaborate preparations for the ceremony are begun. On the eve of the auspicious event, however, Kaikeyī, the middlemost of the king’s three wives and his favorite, is roused to a fit of jealousy and resentment by her maidservant, Mantharā, under whose guidance she claims two boons that the king had once granted her long ago but never fulfilled. In his infatuation for the beautiful Kaikeyī, and constrained by his rigid devotion to his given word, the king, although heartbroken, accedes to her demands and orders Rāma exiled to the wilderness for fourteen years while allowing the succession to pass from him to Kaikeyī’s son, Bharata.

Despite the rebellious rage of his loyal brother Lakṣmanā, Rāma, exhibiting the stoicism, adherence to righteousness, and filial devotion for which he is widely revered, expresses no distress upon hearing of this stroke of malign fate and prepares immediately to carry out his father’s orders. Sītā resists Rāma’s initial instructions to remain behind in the capital and vows to follow him into hardship and exile. Rāma gives away all of his personal wealth and, donning the garb of a forest ascetic, departs for the wilderness, accompanied only by his faithful wife, Sītā, and his devoted brother, Lakṣmanā. The entire population of the city is consumed with grief for the exiled prince, and the king, his cherished hopes for Rāma’s consecration shattered and his beloved son banished by his own hand, dies of a broken heart.
Messengers are dispatched to summon Bharata back from his lengthy stay at the court of his uncle in Rājaṛa. But the prince indignantly refuses to profit by the scheming of Mantharā and his mother. He rejects the throne and instead proceeds with a grand entourage to the forest in an effort to persuade Rāma to return and rule. But Rāma, determined to carry out the order of his father to the letter, refuses to return before the end of the fourteen-year period set for his exile. The brothers reach an impasse that is resolved only when Bharata agrees to govern as regent in Rāma’s name. In token of Rāma’s sovereignty, Bharata takes his brother’s sandals to set on the throne in his stead. He vows to remain outside the capital until Rāma’s return and to serve as regent from a village near the capital. Rāma, Sitā, and Lakṣmaṇa then abandon their pleasant mountain-top dwelling as being too close to the city and move south into the wild and rākṣasa-infested Daṇḍaka forest.

The Ayodhyākāṇḍa is noteworthy in a number of respects. For one thing, it raises ethical questions about the actions of the old king Daśaratha. For, although he is portrayed as the model of a righteous king, it appears that, as hinted at in the opening of the book and, in fact, confirmed near its end by Rāma himself, the king had once promised the royal succession to Kaikeyi’s son as a prenuptial agreement. Moreover, it shows the king as subordinating his royal duty to his infatuation for the beautiful junior queen in his efforts to placate her even before she mentions the matter of his two unfulfilled boons. In this way, it constructs the old king as a kind of foil for Rāma and helps us understand the hard choices the latter will later make in service of his ideal of righteous kingship. In addition, the book gives us a certain insight into how the author understood the gendered politics of the royal women’s quarters as Mantharā explains to the naive and malleable Kaikeyi how her status as the king’s favorite will come to haunt her should her rival Kausalyā become queen mother upon the consecration of Rāma.

The Aranyakāṇḍa

The epic’s third book recounts the dramatic events that occur during the long years of Rāma’s exile in the forest (aranya). The prince and his two companions have now pushed on into the Daṇḍaka forest, a wilderness peopled only by pious ascetics and fierce rākṣasas. The former appeal to Rāma to protect them from the depredations of the latter, and he promises to do so. Near the beginning of the book, Sitā is briefly carried off by a rākṣasa called Virādha in an episode that prefigures her later abduction by Rāvaṇa, the central event of the book and the pivotal episode of the epic.

While the three are dwelling peacefully in the lovely woodlands of Pañcavaṭī, they are visited by a rākṣasa woman, Śūrpaṇakāhā, the sister of the rākṣasa lord, Rāvaṇa. She attempts to seduce first Rāma and then Lakṣmaṇa, but failing in this, she tries to kill Sitā. The rākṣasa woman is stopped by Lakṣmaṇa, who, acting on his elder’s orders, mutilates her. She runs shrieking to one of her kinsmen, the powerful rākṣasa Khara, who sends a small punitive expedition of fourteen fierce rākṣasas against the princes. When Rāma annihilates them, Khara himself comes at the head of a large army of fourteen thousand terrible rākṣasas, but the hero once more exterminates his attackers. When these tidings come
to the ears of Rāvana, he resolves to destroy Rāma by carrying off Sītā. Enlisting the aid of the rākṣasa Mārica, the rākṣasa whom Rāma had stunned during the Bālakāṇḍa battle at Viśvāmitra’s ashram, the demon king comes to the Pañcavati forest. There Mārica, using the rākṣasas’ power of shape-shifting, assumes the form of a beautiful golden deer, in order to captivate Sītā’s fancy and lure Rāma far off into the woods in an effort to catch it for her. Finally, struck by Rāma’s arrow, the dying rākṣasa imitates Rāma’s voice and cries out as if in peril. At Sītā’s panicky urging, Lakṣmaṇa, disobeying Rāma’s strict orders to guard her, leaves her alone and follows him into the woods.

In the brothers’ absence, Rāvana, assuming the guise of a pious brahman mendicant, approaches Sītā and, after some increasingly inappropriate sexual comments, carries her off by force. Daśaratha’s old friend, the vulture Jaṭāyus, attempts to save her, but after a fierce aerial battle, he falls, mortally wounded. Sītā is carried off to Rāvana’s island fortress of Laṅkā where she is kept under a heavy guard of fierce and bloodthirsty rākṣasa women.

Meanwhile, upon discovering the loss of Sītā, Rāma laments wildly and, maddened by grief, wanders through the forest, vainly searching for her and threatening the plants and animals if they do not return her to him. At length, pacified by grief, wanders through the forest, vainly searching for her and threatens.

The Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa

The fourth book of the epic is set largely in and around the monkey (vānara) citadel of Kiṣkindhā and continues the somewhat fairy-tale-like atmosphere of the preceding book. Searching in the forest for Sītā, Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa meet the son of the wind god, Hanumān, the greatest of monkey heroes and an adherent of Sugriva, the banished pretender to the throne of Kiṣkindhā. Upon meeting Rāma, Sugriva tells him a curious tale of his rivalry and conflict with his elder brother, the monkey king Vālin, and his own banishment by the latter. He and Rāma conclude a pact according to which the latter is to help the former kill the more powerful Vālin and take both his throne and his queen. In return for this, Sugriva agrees to aid Rāma in his search for the abducted princess.

Accordingly, Rāma shoots Vālin from ambush while the latter is engaged in hand-to-hand combat with Sugriva. Finally, after much delay, procrastination, and threats from Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, Sugriva musters his monkey warriors and sends them out in the four directions to scour the earth in search of Sītā. The southern expedition, under the leadership of Vālin’s son, Aṅgada, and Hanumān, has several strange adventures, including a sojourn in an enchanted underground realm. Finally, having failed in their quest, the southern party is ashamed
and fearful of returning to Sugrīva empty-handed. They resolve to fast to death but are rescued from this fate by the appearance of the aged vulture Saṃpāti, elder brother of the slain vulture Jaṭāyu, who tells them of Sītā’s confinement across the sea in Laṅkā. The monkeys discuss what is to be done, and in the end, Hanumān, the only monkey powerful enough to leap across the ocean, volunteers to do so in search of the princess.

The book has given rise to a continuing controversy within the receptive community of the Rāmāyaṇa, in that the tradition has expressed ambivalent feelings about the way Rāma killed Vālin from ambush while the monkey was engaged in a hand-to-hand battle with his brother Sugrīva. The issue is first argued out between the hero and the dying monkey in the text itself and continues to this day to be discussed in ephemeral texts on the epic in one or another of its variants and in questions during religious discourses on the story. It also serves to move the ethical and moral register of the narrative from the generally strictly dharmic, or righteous, kingdom of Kosala to the rather more louche world of the monkey kingdom of Kiṣkindhā, with its fratricidal violence and sensual excess.

The Sundarākāṇḍa

The fifth book of the poem is called, for reasons that are not wholly clear, the Sundarākāṇḍa, “The Beautiful Book,” and it is centrally concerned with a detailed, vivid, violent, and often amusing account of Hanumān’s adventures in the splendid fortress city of the island Laṅkā.

After a heroic and eventful leap across the ocean, Hanumān arrives on the shores of Laṅkā. There he explores the rākṣasas’ city and spies on Rāvana. The poet’s descriptions of the city and the rākṣasas king are colorful and often finely written, as is his description of the forlorn Sītā in captivity. Held captive in a grove of aśoka trees, Sītā is alternately cajoled and threatened by Rāvana and the rākṣasas women who guard her. When Hanumān at last finds the despondent princess, he comforts her, giving her Rāma’s signet ring, which Rāma had bestowed upon him to serve as a token of his bona fides. He offers to carry Sītā back to Rāma, but she refuses, reluctant to allow herself to be willingly touched by a male other than her husband, and argues that Rāma must come himself to avenge the insult of her abduction.

Hanumān then wreaks havoc in Laṅkā, destroying groves and buildings and killing many servants and soldiers of the king. At last, he allows himself to be captured by Indrajit, Rāvana’s fearsome son, and is brought before Rāvana. After an interview during which he reviles the king, he is condemned and his tail is set afire. But the monkey escapes his bonds and, leaping from rooftop to rooftop, sets fire to the city with his tail, ensuring that the conflagration spares both him and Sītā. Finally, the mighty monkey leaps back to the mainland and rejoins his companions. Together they make their way back to Kiṣkindhā, drunkenly raiding on the way a grove belonging to Sugrīva. Hanumān reports his adventures and the success of his mission to Rāma and Sugrīva.

8 For a discussion of the name of this book, see PVR 5: 75–78.
The *Sundarakāṇḍa* is considered by many to be the *bīja*, “seed”—or, as we might say, the heart—of the epic poem. This is probably because it is in this book that the tragic trajectory of the narrative begins to reverse itself with Hanumān’s discovery of the abducted heroine and her renewed hope of rescue and reunion with her husband. Thus, ritualized formal recitations (*parāyaṇa*) of the complete text of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa* are traditionally begun with this book and not the first one, the *Bālakāṇḍa*. In some Hindu communities for which the work is a central scripture, the book is used as a prognosticative text, somewhat in the manner of the *I Ching*, and its recitation is believed to help in the solution of many worldly problems. For this reason, the book is often printed and sold separately from the epic as a whole, like the *Bhagavadgītā* of the *Mahābhārata*.

**The Yuddhakāṇḍa**

As its name suggests, the sixth book of the poem, the *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, “The Book of War,” is chiefly concerned with the war that takes place before the walls of Laṅkā between the forces of Rāma, his monkey allies, and a few defector rākṣasas on one side, and the rākṣasa hordes of Rāvana on the other. The book contains elaborate descriptions of the monkey (*vāna*) forces and many detailed accounts of both single combats and mass melees between the various leading warriors and their troops. As a result, it is the longest of the poem’s seven *kāṇḍas* and nearly twice the size of the next-longest.

Having received Hanumān’s report on Sītā and the military defenses of Laṅkā, Rāma and Lakṣmana march with their simian allies to the southern coast of India. There they are joined by Rāvana’s renegade brother Vibhīṣaṇa, who, repelled by his brother’s outrageous abduction of Sītā and unable to reason with him, has defected, with a handful of retainers, to the side of his enemies. He is accepted as an ally by Rāma and provides him with vital intelligence and assistance throughout the war.

Under the direction of their engineer Nala, the son of the divine architect, Viśvakarman, the monkeys construct a bridge across the ocean by means of which the princes and their army cross over to Laṅkā and lay siege to the city. A protracted and bloody, though far from realistic, series of battles rage, with the advantage shifting from one side to the other. After an initial encounter with Rāma, Rāvana is humiliatingly dismissed by his foe and withdraws from the battlefield for a time. He then dispatches, one after another, his foremost warriors, each of whom is killed in turn by Rāma or his allies. Noteworthy among these are his gargantuan and narcoleptic brother Kumbhakarṇa and his terrifying son Rāvaṇī Indrajit, who is both a mighty warrior and a fearsome sorcerer. Finally, all his champions slain, Rāvana rides forth to battle and, after a mighty and prolonged duel, Rāma finally kills him. Rāma then installs Vibhīṣaṇa on the throne of Laṅkā and sends for Sītā. But Rāma initially expresses no joy in recovering her. Instead, he abuses her verbally and refuses to take her back on the grounds that she has lived in the house of another man. Only when the princess is proved innocent of any unfaithfulness by submitting herself to a public ordeal by fire does the prince accept her.

At last, his enemy slain, his wife recovered, and his fourteen years of exile passed, Rāma returns home in Vibhīṣaṇa’s flying palace, the Puṣpaka. Upon his
return to Ayodhā, Rāma relieves Bharata, who had been administering the kingdom as an ascetic during his absence, and celebrates his long-delayed royal consecration, inaugurating a millennia-long utopian reign, the famous Rāma-rājya. In many later influential versions of the Rāmāyaṇa, the tale ends here, leaving it with a “happily ever after” ending. But this is far from the case in Vālmiki’s poem.

The Uttarakāṇḍa

The seventh and final book of Vālmiki’s Rāmāyaṇa, entitled simply the Uttarakāṇḍa, “The Last Book,”9 is more heterogeneous in its contents and controversial in its reception than any of the epic’s other six books. Of the nature of an extensive epilogue, it contains three general categories of narrative material. The first category includes legends that provide the background, origins, and early careers of some of the outstanding and endlessly fascinating characters in the epic drama whose antecedents we were not fully described in the first six books. Interestingly, nearly the entire first half of the book is devoted to a lengthy account of the history and genealogy of the rākṣasas and the early career of Rāvaṇa and, to a much smaller extent, to an account of the childhood deeds of Hanumān. In this section many of the events of the central portion of the epic story are explained as having had their roots in encounters and curses in the distant past during Rāvaṇa’s wild career of rape, conquest, and carnage.

The bulk of this portion of the text concerns Rāvaṇa’s birth and early years and his many campaigns of world conquest, during which he defeats and assaults many kings, gods, sages, and demons and rapes and abducts their womenfolk. Some of the curses he incurs during his wild and violent rampage through the three worlds serve to explain a number of conditions that face him later on, during the lifetime of Rāma. First, he is cursed prenatally by his own father to be an evildoer. Subsequently Vedavatī, a brahmā woman whom he molests, immolates herself, vowing to be reborn one day (as Sītā) for his destruction. After he rapes a semidivine woman, her lover curses him to die should he ever again take a woman by force. Similarly, he is cursed by the collectivity of the many women he has abducted to meet his death on account of a woman, and he is cursed by a king of the lineage of the Ikṣvākus—whom he kills—to be himself slain by a future prince (Rāma) of that lineage. Even the destruction of Rāvaṇa’s hosts by powerful, semidivine monkeys is explained by a curse on the part of Lord Śiva’s attendant Nandin, who, enraged at Rāvaṇa for mocking him in his simian form, curses him to that effect.

But despite his boon from Brahmā and his long string of conquests, the narrative shows that no one is ultimately invulnerable. The biography of the seemingly invincible rākṣasa ends with two accounts of battles in which he emerges as the loser: he is defeated and captured first by the mighty thousand-armed human king Arjuna Kārtavirya and then also defeated by the powerful monkey king Vālīn. These episodes, narrated by the sage Agastya, serve to show that even the mightiest can meet their match and to foreshadow Rāvaṇa’s

9 For a discussion of the name of this book, see PVR 7: 88*20 and note (p. 1179).
ultimately defeat at the hands of a “mere man,” Rāma. This is all in keeping with Vālmiki’s adherence to the boon of Brahmā according to which the rākṣasa king would be invulnerable to all supernatural beings, but not to humans or animals.

The second category of the Uttarakāṇḍa’s narrative material consists of a series of exemplary myths and legends that are only thematically related to the epic story and its characters. This material is largely made up of cautionary tales told to or by Rāma to illustrate the dire consequences that befall monarchs who fail to strictly uphold the duties of kingship. They are placed in the text at the points, as we discuss later, where Rāma has become prey to dejection after feeling obligated by kingly duty to exile his beloved wife, where he is contemplating a sacrifice, and when he visits the ashram of the sage Agastya. These episodes also generally serve to bolster the poem’s reputation as a textbook on rājaharṣa, “royal duty,”—a kind of mirror for kings that presents its hero as the model of the ideal monarch.

The last, and in several ways the most interesting, category of material in the Uttarakāṇḍa directly concerns itself with episodes from the final years of Rāma, his wife, and his brothers. These episodes are interspersed among the largely cautionary tales of the second category mentioned earlier. With struggle, adversity, and sorrow seemingly behind him, Rāma settles down with Sītā to rule in peace, prosperity, and happiness. We see what looks to be the perfect end to a fairy tale or romance as Rāma and his queen begin their long-delayed rule of their utopian kingdom—the legendary, eleven-thousand-year Rāmarājya. But as it develops, there is yet trouble in paradise, and the joy of the hero and heroine is to be tragically brief.

After dismissing his allies in the Laṅkan war with due honors and gifts, Rāma, to his delight, learns that his beloved Sītā is pregnant. But now it suddenly comes to his attention that, despite her fire ordeal in Laṅkā, the people of Ayodhya are grumbling that the king is corrupt in that, in his lust for the beautiful queen, he has taken back into his harem a woman who has lived in the house of the lecherous Rāvaṇa. They fear that, since a king sets the moral standard for his kingdom, they too will have to put up with misbehavior on the part of their own wives.

Fearing a scandal, and in strict conformity to what he sees as the stern duty of a sovereign, Rāma, under the pretext of an excursion, banishes the queen despite her pregnancy and though he knows the spreading rumors about her are false. Abandoned in the wilderness by Lakṣmana, the hapless queen is taken in and sheltered in his ashram by none other than the poet-seer Vālmiki. There she gives birth to twin sons, Lava and Kuśa, who will become the sage’s disciples and the bards who will perform their master’s poetic creation, the Rāmāyaṇa. Rāma’s separation from his beloved wife casts him into deep grief and depression, which are alleviated only through the hearing and telling of cautionary tales about the terrible fate of kings who neglect their royal duties.

During Rāma’s otherwise ideal reign, two anomalous but significant events occur. First, in a kind of mini-reprise of the central theme of the epic, Rāma receives a delegation of sages from the region of the Yamunā River, who have come to complain about the depredations of a terrible and monstrous demon called
Lavana. Rama deputes his youngest brother, Shatrughna, who has heretofore had almost no active role in the epic, to deal with this assault on dharma, “righteousness.” Shatrughna sets forth and, on his journey, stays over one night in the ashram of Valmiki—the very night when Sitā gives birth to Lava and Kuśa. He then proceeds to the Yamunā, where, after a fierce battle, he dispatches the monster and founds the prosperous city of Madhurā (Mathurā) in the region of Saurāṣṭra, where he rules as a virtuous king. After twelve years, longing to see his beloved elder brother, he returns to Ayodhyā with his army, once more staying overnight at Valmiki’s ashram. During this brief visit, he and his troops hear the Rāmāyaṇa beautifully sung by the twin bards. Although Shatrughna is eager to remain at his brother’s side, in keeping with the tenor of the book as a guide for kings, Rama sternly orders him to return to his kingdom to govern his people righteously.

Shortly after Shatrughna’s departure, there is another troubling incident, this time in the capital city itself. A grieving brahman father arrives at Rama’s palace holding in his arms the body of his young son. This is particularly troubling as, according to the tradition—stated multiple times in the epic, and continuing to be a fundamental element of the legacy of the Rāmāyaṇa—the long period of Rama’s millennial reign was a true utopia. Thus, all classes of people strictly observed their proper societal duties, wives always obeyed their husbands, and there was no crime, no disease, and no natural disasters. One point that is stressed repeatedly is that in this paradisiac kingdom, no child ever predeceased its parents. In such a world, the fact that an unthinkable occurrence has occurred can only mean that some violation of the social and ritual order is taking place and that it is the responsibility of the king to remedy it. Rama must therefore find and punish the transgressor. In this he is advised by Närada, the same seer who first told Valmiki the story of Rama. Närada tells the king that somewhere in his realm a śūdra—that is, a member of the lowest of the four traditional social classes of brahmanical society—is practicing religious austerities that are exclusively reserved (during that cosmic era, the Tretā Yuga) for the members of the three higher social classes, the so-called “twice-born.”

Rama summons and mounts the Puṣpaka, the flying palace he had received from Vibhiṣaṇa, and conducts an aerial surveillance of his kingdom. Near the southern border he finds a man hanging from a tree by his feet. Questioned, the man says that he is practicing austerities with the aim of entering heaven in his earthly body. When he identifies himself as Śambuca, a śūdra, Rama summarily beheads him. The moment the śūdra dies, the dead brahman child miraculously returns to life in Ayodhyā. The gods praise Rama and shower him with heavenly blossoms.

Rama then pays a brief visit to the ashram of the great sage Agastya, who had narrated the history of the rākṣasas, Rāvana, and Hanumān earlier in the book. There Rama hears a series of additional cautionary tales about kings and kingdoms that suffered ghastly punishments for failure to live up to the code of royal conduct. Rama then returns to Ayodhyā. Having had a golden image of his banished wife created to serve as her surrogate in the performance of the royal sacrifices, Rama performs a great aśvamedha, “horse sacrifice.”
During the rite, two handsome young bards appear and begin to recite the Rāmāyaṇa. It turns out that these two, the twins Kuśa and Lava, are in fact the sons of Rāma and Sitā, who have been sheltered for twelve years with their mother in Vālmiki’s ashram. Rāma sends for his beloved queen, intending to take her back. But despite Vālmiki’s attestation of her absolute fidelity, Rāma demands that Sitā take a solemn public oath before the assembled populace. She complies, but declares that if she has indeed been faithful to her husband in word, thought, and deed, Mādhavi, the earth goddess, her mother, should receive her. As the ground opens, the goddess emerges on a bejeweled throne, places her long-suffering daughter beside her, and vanishes into the earth.

Consumed by an inconsolable grief, Rāma performs sacrifices and rules for many years and sends his brothers out to conquer kingdoms for their sons. At last, urged by a messenger of the gods to resume his true heavenly form as Lord Viṣṇu, he is forced to banish Lakṣmana, who abandons his earthly body in the Sarayū River. Rāma then divides his own kingdom between his sons and, followed by the inhabitants of Ayodhyā and most of his erstwhile allies, enters the waters of the Sarayū and returns to his heavenly abode. These events bring to a close both the book and the epic.

There are some features of the Uttarakāṇḍa that set it apart from the other books of the poem. For one thing, much of the narrative focuses on figures other than Rāma and is narrated only indirectly by Vālmiki, being placed in the mouths of other figures such as Agastya. Scholars of the Rāmāyaṇa have also noted that much of the text shows linguistic and rhetorical differences from the rest of the poem, especially books 2 through 6, while some have even argued that the entire book is a later addition to the work and that the “original” poem ended with the Yuddhakāṇḍa and the consecration of Rāma. This is a complex issue, and we will not go into the details of the arguments here.10

The philological issue aside, there is another reason that the book has been the object of controversy: virtually the only two actions that Rāma is represented as taking in the book have come to be matters of concern and contestation over the long history of the poem among particular segments of its audience, characterized by region, social class, religion, and gender. The first of these is the banishment of Sitā despite her innocence with regard to any infidelity or wrongdoing; Sitā’s banishment and her fire ordeal at the end of the Yuddhakāṇḍa have been sources of discomfort for many later authors writing on the Rāmāyaṇa theme, and an object of outrage on the part of modern feminists and women’s rights groups. The second issue is Rāma’s cold-blooded execution of the śūdra ascetic Śambūka, which has drawn veiled critique from poets and playwrights in the Rāmāyaṇa tradition and, of course, the anger of modern Dalit rights activists and progressive political groups. These responses are in harmony with social and political pushback against the Rāmāyaṇa as a whole by such regional political movements as the Dravidian movement in South India, especially in Tamil Nadu.

As a result of all this, many influential regional language versions of the Rāma story simply eliminate the Uttarakāṇḍa entirely, while even some modern

10 Those interested in this issue should consult PVR 7: 54–81.
translators similarly excise the book, either on philological grounds, in light of the textual issues noted here, or, in the case of some Hindu devotees of Rāma, in their discomfort with the two episodes mentioned here and the criticism they have engendered.\textsuperscript{11}

**The Major Characters of the Rāmāyaṇa**

Unlike the vast Mahābhārata with its large cast of ambivalent and intimately related characters, its theme of an ugly intrafamilial civil war, and its complex framing of moral and ethical ambiguities, the Rāmāyaṇa is a shorter, simpler tale constructed around a sharply defined binary of dharma, “good,” and adharma, “evil.” Correspondingly, its major characters tend to be drawn as paradigmatic examples of one or the other of this pair of opposites and are often clearly intended to serve as models for behavior that its audiences are urged either to emulate or eschew. Ignoring for the moment issues of social class, which we discuss later, the qualities of ethical and moral behavior and the culture’s prized virtues of familial solidarity, discipline, and control of the senses are broadly shown—with some notable exceptions—as possessed differentially by the three species of figures who collectively make up the bulk of the epic’s dramatis personae. These are the humans, the animals, and the demons. In this way, one might regard the story of the Rāmāyaṇa as something like “A Tale of Three Cities: Ayodhya, Kīśkindhā, and Lāṅkā.” Let us briefly examine the principal figures belonging to these species—both those who serve as exemplary of their kind and those who go against their supposedly innate natures.

**The Humans**

Rāma

As the title of the poem suggests, Rāma is unquestionably the central and most compelling of the epic’s characters. With the exception of his early childhood, the narrative closely documents his life from birth to death. He is “on stage,” as it were, playing a significant role in the action of all of the epic’s books, with the exception of the Sundarakāṇḍa. But even there, much of the book’s discourse centers on him. The entire work is filled with passages praising his physical, mental, and emotional qualities; his virtually perfect adherence to the norms of filial piety, the warrior code (ksatriyadharmac), and the duties of a king (rājadharma); and his compassion and deference to brahmins and elders. In short, with the exception of what are regarded in some quarters as a few ethically controversial episodes involving his treatment of his wife, his killing of the monkey king Vālin, and his execution of Śambūka, Rāma is held up as a paragon of virtue, both for Vālmiki and for his audiences down to the present day. He is, of course, one of the principal incarnations of Lord Viṣṇu, the Supreme Being, who in age after age comes to earth to rid the world of some enormous evil. But on the human plane—the one on which we, as fellow humans, are supposed to emulate him—he is chiefly admired for his disciplined act of self-sacrifice in cheer-

\textsuperscript{11} For a full discussion of these issues, see our extensive introduction to the book at PVR 7: 74–113.
fully abandoning his right to his ancestral throne in order to preserve the truth of his father’s word. His forbearance and adherence to the rules of chivalry are also evident in his strict adherence to the rules of combat even in the face of defeat and death, as well as in his willingness to spare even his monstrous arch-enemy, should the latter abandon his evil ways.

Rāma is rather unusual, however, when compared with the other principal incarnations of Lord Viṣṇu, most of whom appear on earth for one brief moment to accomplish a single critical mission, such as the rescue of the gods, the salvation of the earth, or the salvation of the virtuous through the destruction of an evil tyrant. Once they have completed their respective missions, they return to their primordial divine form. Among the well-known standard list of the ten incarnations (daśāvatāras), only Kṛṣṇa, the Buddha, and the two Rāmas (Rāma of the Rāmdāna and Rāma Jāmadagnya, or Paraśurāma) remain for very long periods on earth. Of the two most popular and widely worshiped incarnations, Rāma and Kṛṣṇa, the latter, having accomplished his two avatārī missions of killing the demonic tyrant Kaṃśa and relieving the earth of its burden of demons and demonic kings—as described in the Mahābhārata, the Harivamsa, and many purānas—returns to his heavenly form only a few decades thereafter. Rāma, on the other hand, having extracted, as it were, the lokakañṭaka, “the thorn of the world,” Rāvaṇa, then inaugurates and rules a millennia-long kingdom of God on earth.

Sitā
There can be no doubt that Sitā, the heroine of the Rāmdāna, is its most poignant and long-suffering figure. As a consequence of her long years of generally uncomplaining hardship, captivity, suffering, and heartbreak, her journey has captivated audiences from the moment of the epic’s earliest circulation. Indeed, in terms of her centrality to the narrative, even when she is not the direct focus of the poet’s attention, her wrenching reversals of fortune and her uncomplaining hardship, captivity, suffering, and heartbreak, her journey has been noted, all references are to the Mahābhārata: Critical Edition (1933–1970).

12 According to the Mahābhārata, Kṛṣṇa abandoned his earthly form just thirty-six years after the end of the Bhārata War, the management of which constituted the second of his major avatārī missions. His incarnation ends immediately after the internece slaughter of the Vṛṣṇis and Andhakas in Dwārakā. See the Mauṣalaparvan of the Mahābhārata. The chronology is given in the first adhyāya of the Mauṣalaparvan (MBh 16.1.1). Unless otherwise noted, all references are to the Mahābhārata: Critical Edition (1933–1970).
womb. Vedavatī is ultimately reborn in the Tretā Yuga as Sitā for the destruction of Rāvaṇa, who had violated her.

Vālmīki’s Sitā is not quite as passive and submissive as she is often thought to be in the popular imagination. She can be strongly outspoken, as, for example, when she sharply criticizes Rāma, who, upon being banished by his father, tries to persuade her to stay behind in Ayodhyā, and also when she is treated harshly either by him or by Rāvaṇa. Nonetheless, as a result of her long and patient endurance of the many hardships she faces—and especially her widely applauded and rather fierce insistence on accompanying her exiled husband into fourteen years of poverty and harsh conditions in the forest despite Rāma’s initial resistance to her doing so—Sitā has come to be regarded as the model of ideal Indian wifely conduct, a *pativrata*, a woman completely devoted to following her husband no matter what fate may allot him.

**Lakṣmaṇa**

One of the twin sons of King Daśaratha’s junior-most wife, Sumitrā, Lakṣmaṇa has long stood as a prime exemplar of a particular type of idealized behavior that is expected of a younger brother with regard to his elder. From childhood onward, he serves as Rāma’s inseparable companion. In fact, it appears that his relation to his elder as a kind of esquire is mirrored in the relationship of his much less foregrounded twin, Śatrughna, to the second eldest of the four brothers and co-avatāras, Bharata. Vālmīki describes Lakṣmaṇa as “a second life breath” outside Rāma’s body and observes that without him by his side Rāma could neither sleep nor eat.13

Thus, it is virtually axiomatic that Lakṣmaṇa will accompany and assist Rāma in his long exile and in the hard-fought battles with the *rākṣasas* where he distinguishes himself as a formidable warrior, slaying the most dangerous and fearsome of their demonic foes, Rāvaṇi Indrajit, Rāvaṇa’s son. It is particularly noteworthy that his devoted service to Rāma and Sitā is highlighted by the southern textual tradition’s emphasis on his dogged refusal to gaze on the body of his sister-in-law, as demonstrated several times by his asseveration that during all their long years of living closely together he has never raised his eyes above Sitā’s feet.14

Rāma’s powerful emotional bond with Lakṣmaṇa is made apparent in the epic by the depictions of his extravagant grief when he believes that his brother has been mortally wounded in battle. In the end, Lakṣmaṇa sacrifices his life for the well-being of his beloved brother and the salvation of his family, becoming the only one of Rāma’s brothers to precede him in returning to their common divine source, Lord Viṣṇu.

Lakṣmaṇa also serves as a kind of emotional foil for his brother, showing a fiery and rebellious spirit where Rāma is calm and self-controlled, and acting as a calming and encouraging influence on those few occasions when his brother gives way to rage or despair.

---

13 *VR* 1.17.17.
Bharata
The son of Daśaratha’s favorite, his middle wife, Kaikeyī, Bharata presents another aspect of the idealized younger brother. The natural rival of his brother and the intended beneficiary of the scheme of Kaikeyī and her maid Mantharā to make him prince regent in place of Rāma, Bharata refuses to accept his consecration. Instead, he implores Rāma to return and rule despite the reluctant command of their father. When Rāma denies his request, Bharata vows to serve only as regent in his brother’s name. He places Rāma’s sandals on the throne as a symbol of his brother’s authority and lives an extremely ascetic life outside the capital during the fourteen years of Rāma’s exile. In so doing, he serves as a model of both Rāma’s self-sacrifice and Lakṣmana’s fraternal devotion.

Śatrughna
The youngest of the four sons of Daśaratha who incarnate, to differing degrees, the divine essence of Lord Viṣṇu, Śatrughna has only a relatively minimal role in the epic drama. In his devotion to his older brother Bharata and in the way he serves as that brother’s emotional foil, he mirrors the relationship of his twin, Lakṣmana, to Rāma. This is evident when, returning to Ayodhyā with his brother to find his father dead and Rāma exiled as a result of the plot of Mantharā and Kaikeyī, Śatrughna physically assaults the maidservant until Bharata orders him to desist, reminding him of Rāma’s disapproval of such conduct. Śatrughna’s only significant, independent action in the poem is his slaying of the demon Lavaṇa and the founding of the city of Madhurā, as described in the poem’s final book, the Uttarakaṇḍa.

Daśaratha
Although Daśaratha is depicted in the opening chapters of the poem as a grand and righteous monarch, in its second book the aged king is shown to have a fatal flaw. There we see that his sexual infatuation for his beautiful junior queen, Kaikeyī, makes him vulnerable to her wiles, so that even before she mentions the famous boons he once gave her, he vows to do anything she wants, no matter how outrageous, in order to pacify her. Later in the same book, we learn from the lips of Rāma himself that the king had actually promised the royal succession to a son of Kaikeyī as part of a prenuptial agreement with her father. This is a promise that he breaks in order to consecrate Rāma while Bharata is away from the capital.

In this way, Daśaratha serves as a foil for his ultra-righteous eldest son Rāma, and the old king’s flaws may be seen as explaining the latter’s almost obsessive concern with maintaining his reputation for incorruptibility, which leads to his harsh treatment of Sītā in the Yuddha- and Uttarakaṇḍas.

Kausalyā
Kausalyā, Daśaratha’s chief queen and Rāma’s mother, is portrayed as an ideal maternal figure: ascetic, pious, and utterly devoted to her son and her husband. But as the narrative makes clear, she no longer excites the king’s passion, and so he devotes himself to her younger rival, with catastrophic results. When she
learns of her son’s sudden reversal of fortune, she vows, against the cultural norm of the devoted wife (pativrata), to follow her beloved son into exile, only abandoning her plan when Rāma reminds her of her wifely duty.

Kaikeyī
The story of Daśaratha’s bewitching but ultimately treacherous junior wife serves as one of the traditional Indian patriarchy’s cautionary tales about the seductive and corrupting influence of women. Initially portrayed as an innocent and trusting young woman delighted to learn of the impending consecration of her son, Kaikeyī is easily persuaded by her cunning maidservant, Mantharā, of the danger to her and her own son should Rāma be inaugurated as prince regent. She then allows herself to be manipulated into using her feminine wiles, as well as some unfulfilled vows of her husband, to force him to order the banishment of Rāma and the inauguration of Bharata in his stead. Although she appears to be quickly rehabilitated in the epic, she remains in the popular imagination a prime example of the shrewish wife who betrays and ultimately causes the death of her husband.

The Animals
It will be recalled that a particular feature of the Rāma legend is that the story’s archvillain, Rāvana, had received a boon of invulnerability from all the various races of supernatural beings. He remained, however, vulnerable to “lower” beings, that is to say, humans and animals. It is for this reason (as well as the curse of Nandin) that, during the course of his campaign against Rāvana, Rāma’s principal allies, apart from his brother Lakṣmana and Rāvana’s renegade brother Vibhiṣaṇa, are a vast horde of semidivine and partially civilized monkeys (vānaras).

The sometimes fairy-tale-like tenor of the poem also allows a few birds to enter the plot on specific occasions to assist Rāma. These include the great vulture Jaṭāyu, an old friend and ally of the Kosalan court who, in the Aranyakāṇḍa, gives his life in a vain attempt to rescue Sītā from the clutches of Rāvana and who gives Rāma some information about the abduction; and Jaṭāyu’s older brother, Sampāti, who tells the monkeys’ southern search party where Rāvana has taken Sītā. Also, at one point in the Yuddhakāṇḍa, when both Rāma and Lakṣmana have been rendered hors de combat through the power of Indrajit’s sinister serpent-weapons, the divine bird Garuda makes an appearance as a sort of avis ex machina to drive away the snakes, whose nemesis he is.

But aside from the boon of Rāvana and the entertainment value of having the sometimes fearsome and sometimes comical monkeys as Rāma’s often erratic sidekicks, there is, it seems, a higher thematic value in the introduction of the alternately valorous and cowardly simians. For the monkey kingdom of Kiṣkindhā represents a contrast to the predominantly righteous world of Ayodhyā, with its supremely deferential and self-disciplined heroes like Rāma, Bharata, and Lakṣmana, who always subordinate their personal interests and desires to their sense of duty, righteousness, and familial harmony. By way of contrast, in the kingdom of the monkeys we encounter the perhaps more realistic themes of sibling rivalry, fraternal violence, and sensual excess that the poet tries to keep
as far away as possible from the scions of the solar dynasty. The monkeys also occasionally exhibit cowardice in battle, fleeing from formidable rākṣasa foes.

**Sugrīva**

Sugrīva is a critical figure in the epic story. Without his assistance Rāma would have been hard-pressed to locate his abducted wife and would have found it virtually impossible to recruit a force capable of confronting the supernaturally powerful and heavily armed forces of Rāvana. Nonetheless, as an epic hero, Sugrīva is portrayed as cruel, impetuous, self-serving, somewhat cowardly, and something of a libertine.

Banished by his elder and more powerful brother, the monkey king Vālin, Sugrīva is forced to cower on a secure hilltop with only a small coterie of loyalists. When Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, searching for the abducted Sītā, come near, he is terrified and sends his counselor Hanumān in disguise to see who they are and what they want. After hearing Rāma’s story, Sugrīva sees an opportunity to dispose of his feared brother and seize his kingdom and his wife, who was stolen from him, he claims, by Vālin. He tells Rāma a self-serving story about how he came to be exiled when, after falsely believing his brother dead, he took over his throne and his harem, only to be roughly handled and expelled when Vālin returned. Sugrīva forges a pact with Rāma to the effect that if the prince will kill his mighty elder brother for him and place him on the throne, he will place the vast hordes of monkeys, whom he will then command, at Rāma’s service. He will then order the monkeys to scour the world for the abducted Sītā and to assist in the campaign to defeat her abductor and bring her back. To fulfill his part of the bargain Rāma instructs Sugrīva to challenge his brother to a single combat, during which Rāma will shoot Vālin from ambush. The brothers fight and Sugrīva is beaten, but Rāma, claiming that he could not tell the two apart, refrains from acting. He then equips Sugrīva with a floral garland to distinguish him from his brother. As the brothers fight a second time, Rāma mortally wounds Vālin. He then engages in a debate with the dying monkey in an effort to justify his action.

Because of his troops’ inability to move freely during the rainy season, Sugrīva is unable to carry out his part of the agreement until the autumn. However, even when the rains have ceased and the roads are passable, he shows no inclination to discharge his obligation, instead immersing himself in the sybaritic pleasures of sex, food, and drink. Finally, his patience exhausted, Rāma sends Lakṣmaṇa to remind the monkey, under threat of death, to rouse himself to action and fulfill his sworn oath. Only then does Sugrīva send out search parties and, once Sītā has been located, muster the simian hosts for battle. We learn that the somewhat undisciplined monkey is also cruel: when his southern search party, thinking that they have failed, decide not to return to Kiṣkindhā, they make this choice because they fear that their master will put them to death. During the war in Laṅkā, however, Sugrīva fights valiantly and performs various heroic feats.

**Vālin**

This remarkable figure cannot be fully described independently of his brother and mortal enemy, Sugrīva. For it is only through Rāma’s somewhat controversial killing of this king of the monkeys that he is able to secure the promise from
Sugriva to use his control of the monkey forces, once he is installed on the throne of his dead brother, to scour the world to find the abducted princess Sītā.

But Vālin has his own history that helps us to understand Rāma’s decision to act on behalf of Sugriva without ever meeting Vālin or hearing his side of the story of the rift between the simian brothers. That story is yet another example of the theme of violent or sublimated fraternal conflict and disinheritance of an older claimant to a throne that runs like a thread through both the Rāmāyaṇa and the Mahābhārata. In this, it not only echoes the deflected succession struggle between Rāma and Bharata but foreshadows as well the parallel conflict in the royal family of the rākṣasas between Rāvana and his younger brother Vibhīṣaṇa, which, like the conflict in Kīṣkindhā, will end only when Rāma kills the elder and installs the younger on the throne.

Vālin is not only the elder brother and, by the normative practice of primogeniture, the rightful king of the monkeys. He is also, as the son of the king of the gods, Indra, more powerful than Sugriva, the son of Sūrya, the sun god. In fact, he is represented in the epic as one of only two individuals powerful enough to best Rāvana himself in combat. At the end of the Uttarakāṇḍa’s lengthy account of the mighty rākṣasa’s victorious campaigns against human kings, supernatural beings, and even the gods themselves, Rāma inquires of the sage Agastya, who had been narrating this account, if there were no beings anywhere powerful enough to overcome the might of the ten-headed lord of the rākṣasas. In reply, the sage tells him of two individuals who accomplished this all-but-impossible feat. The first is the legendary thousand-armed king of Māhiśmati, Arjuna Kārtavīrya, who bested the rākṣasa in a wrestling match and made him his prisoner. The second is Vālin, who, when Rāvana attempts to take him by surprise, whirls around, pinions him, and, tucking the rākṣasa lord in his armpit, flies to the four oceans to perform his ritual baths. In both of these stories, the vanquishers of Rāvana end up forging a firm friendship with him. In the latter case, this may explain why Rāma chose to ally himself with Sugriva instead of the far more powerful Vālin.

When Rāma finally intervenes in a battle between the monkey brothers and mortally wounds Vālin from ambush, the dying monkey rebukes him for shooting him in such a fashion, and the two hold an extensive debate on the propriety of such an attack. This goes back and forth on different grounds until Vālin acknowledges the authority of Rāma as the representative of the royal power of Kosala and dies reconciled to the justice of his death. Some hint of uneasiness with the whole proceeding may be divined from the fact that even after the consecration of Sugriva in place of his slain elder, Rāma sees to it that the heir apparent to the monkey throne is Aṅgada, Vālin’s son, and not any offspring of his successor.

**Hanumān**

Hanumān, the swift and powerful son of the wind god, is one of the towering figures in the Rāmāyaṇa writ large, and he is an important divinity in his own right in Hinduism and in other related Asian religious traditions. For Vālmiki and later authors on the Rāma theme, he is the ultimate devotee of Rāma and Sītā and the exemplar of what is known in Vaiṣṇava theology as dāsyabhāva, the emotive stance of devotional service to one’s chosen divinity.
I

troduction

Introduction

Introduced first in the *Kiskindhākāṇḍa* as a clever counselor of Sugriva, Hanumān is uniquely entrusted with Rāma’s signet ring as a token of recognition when he is included in the southern search party under the leadership of Aṅgada, Vālin’s son. As the son of the wind god, he is also the only monkey powerful enough to leap across the vast expanse of the ocean to search Laṅkā for the abducted princess. Once there, he finds and comforts Sītā, causes general havoc on the island, and defeats many of Rāvaṇa’s warriors. Finally, he allows himself to be captured by Indrajit so that, when dragged in front of the rākṣasa king, he can rebuke him. As a punishment, Hanumān’s tail is set alight, but he then uses it to set fire to the city before returning to the mainland to report to Sugriva and Rāma.

During the war, Hanumān performs many feats of valor in battle and, most iconically, twice flies from Laṅkā to the Himalayas and back to fetch a mountain of healing herbs to cure and restore Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and the monkeys in general when they are wounded or struck down by the fearsome Indrajit. After the war and the consecration of Rāma, he proves himself to be the most passionate of Rāma’s devotees but is denied the privilege of following his lord to the heavenly realm, as he is instructed to remain in the world as long as the *Rāmāyaṇa* continues to be sung among the people. As the epic tale remains current in its many versions until the present day, Hanumān is regarded as one of the Indian tradition’s group of seven *cīrājīvins*, “long-lived ones,” who live on from one cosmic era to another. In addition to the account of his feats in service of Rāma, the *Uttarakāṇḍa* provides a charming account of the monkey hero’s mischievous childhood.

The Lesser Monkeys

Among the hundreds of millions and even billions of monkeys that the *Rāmāyaṇa* tells us made up Rāma’s expeditionary force, there are a number who, if not of the level of significance of Sugriva and Hanumān, still occupy specific important roles in the course of the great war. Among these are Prince Aṅgada, son of Vālin and the leader of the southern search party, who launches a solo attack on Rāvaṇa’s palace; the monkey engineer and architect Nāla, who designs and supervises the construction of the epic’s famous bridge across the ocean, enabling the monkey army to cross over to Laṅkā; Jāmbavān, the aged king of the rākṣasas (in later versions of the story he is often represented as a bear), who directs Hanumān to the Himalayas in search of medicinal herbs; and the simian physician Suṣeṇa, who similarly instructs Hanumān before his second flight to the Himalayas and who employs the herbs to save the life of the mortally wounded Lakṣmaṇa.

The Rākṣasas

As the epic action shifts from the realm of the monkeys, which, as we have seen, represents a moral universe more like the “natural,” observable condition of humanity, with its power struggles, sensual excess, violence, and fraternal rivalries, to the island kingdom of Laṅkā, we see yet another and, indeed, ultimate shift in and degradation of the norms of dharma, “righteousness,” as it is observed and practiced in Ayodhya. Laṅkā is the kingdom of the rākṣasas, violent,
bloodthirsty, and sexually promiscuous parodies of the ideals of Aryan culture and society that the epic seeks to preach. These are the blood-guzzling (rudhirāśana), night-roaming (niśācara) rākṣasas under the tyrannical rule of their king, Rāvana, who is the radical opposite of Rāma and the trampler of all the norms and values of vedic-Hindu civilization.

That said, it is noteworthy that not all of the rākṣasas and their female counterparts, the rākṣasa women (rākṣasīs), are monolithically evil. Some of the womenfolk actually aid and support Sītā in her terror and desolation, while one of the rākṣasa princes comes to be revered as the epitome of righteousness and devotion to Rāma. Even the very worst of them, Rāvana himself, is allowed a certain amount of justification for his evil nature and, in the end, once dead, is given a surprisingly sympathetic send-off by his enemy Rāma.

One might also keep in mind that the poet portrays two rather different categories of rākṣasas, both of which are seen as a menace to the society, culture, and civilization of the Aryans. On the one hand, there are what we might think of as the aristocratic urban elite of the race, who inhabit the glittering palaces and mansions of Lāṅkā and who appear to share the political and even religious norms of their human foes. These include Rāvana and his relatives as well as his ministers and his generals. On the other hand, the poem also shows us an even more horrific and feral type of solitary forest rākṣasa—those who haunt the wilderness, gorging themselves on the flesh and blood of humans and animals that cross their path.

Rāvana

Rāvana, the towering and monstrous antagonist of the epic hero, is, at least in Vālmiki’s portrayal, a more interesting and complex figure than the crude, brutal, and lecherous villain of countless later texts and performative media as well as in the popular imagination. Thus, in spite of his overweening arrogance, lust, and sexual predation, as well as the havoc his aggression wreaks throughout the three worlds, he is nonetheless represented in the Sundarakāṇḍa as a rather glorious potentate, a passionate lover, a husband mourned by his many wives, and, at one point in the Yuddhakāṇḍa, a figure who finally comes to realize the folly of his ultimate transgression. But in the grand account of his career in the epic’s final book, the Uttarakāṇḍa, we see different aspects of the character of this monstrous but fascinating antihero and are given, interestingly, some insight into its formation.

The very first things we learn about Rāvana in this account take place before he is born or even conceived, and they are highly determinative of his character. Rāvana’s mother, Kaikasi, was the child of the powerful rākṣasa ascetic Sumālin. Sumālin, uninterested in negotiating a marriage for his daughter, sends the innocent girl off on her own to ask the brahman sage Viśravas, the son of the seer Pulastya and grandson of Lord Brahmā himself, to marry her. At her father’s command, she approaches Viśravas although he is in a state of consecration as he performs the vedic agnihotra rite. The poet describes the moment as “that fearsome hour (dārunā velā).” Viśravas determines, through his supernatural mental powers, that Kaikasi wishes to marry him and bear his children. He consents to this but warns her that, since she approached him at such a fearsome hour, she will give birth to
fearsome and cruel rākṣasa children. Horrified by this pronouncement, she pleads that such horrible sons would not be worthy of a descendant of Lord Brahmā, Viśravas’s grandfather. The sage partially relents, promising that her youngest son alone, Vibhiṣaṇa, will be righteous and worthy of his noble lineage. Thus, in due time, Kaikasi gives birth to three sons, Rāvaṇa, Kumbhakarṇa, and the righteous Vibhiṣaṇa, as well as a daughter, Śūrpaṇakhā. The birth of her eldest, Rāvaṇa, is accompanied by dire omens, as recounted later by Agastya:

After some time, Rāma, the young girl, who had been addressed in this fashion, gave birth to a horrendous and very fearsome child, who had the form of a rākṣasa. He had ten heads, huge fangs, and he looked like a heap of black collyrium. He had coppery lips, twenty arms, huge mouths, and hair that glowed like fire. The moment he was born, jackals, their mouths emitting flames, and other carnivorous beasts circled in a clockwise direction. The god rained down blood, and the clouds made a harsh rumbling. The sun vanished from the sky, and great meteors crashed to the ground.15

The episode is a curious and disturbing one in which an innocent error of timing on the part of a young girl has hideous consequences for her yet-to-be-conceived children, imposed by their own father. Thus, according to the tale, Rāvaṇa is hardly to be held wholly accountable for his evil nature, which stems largely from his mother’s minor and unintentional transgression and his father’s horrible and excessively cruel overreaction to it. Moreover, Rāvaṇa’s parental difficulties do not end with his father’s prenatal curse. Although he is cursed to be born with an inherently evil nature, it is his mother who, in her greed and ambition, goads him into a state of bitter envy and ultimately hostility toward his glorious elder half brother, Kubera, the god of wealth. In a fit of sibling rivalry, Rāvaṇa vows to equal or surpass Kubera in power and glory, and it is this mission that sets him on his course of fearsome asceticism so that he can acquire the boons that will enable him to conquer and terrorize the triple world, starting with Kubera himself.

Rāvaṇa’s aggressiveness and martial exploits are legendary, and he does not hesitate to challenge any representative of masculine power and authority, whether a king, a god, a great serpent, a demon, or even supreme deities such as Lord Śiva. And it even makes little difference to him if they are his kinsmen: he defeats and slays Kubera, and in the mad frenzy of battle he kills his brother-in-law, the dānava Vidyujjihva, the husband of his sister, Śūrpaṇakhā. Neither does he hesitate to molest, seduce, abduct, and rape any woman he encounters. True to his cannibalistic rākṣasa nature, he also does not scruple to devour a messenger and a group of great seers who have assembled for a holy sacrifice.

There is no space here to list all of Rāvaṇa’s many battles, rapes, and evil deeds. But the epic is sometimes at odds with itself in its accounts of his abductions of women. For example, in the Sundarakāṇḍa, when the poet describes the beautiful women of the rākṣasa’s harem, he says that none of them had been taken against their will but had been won over by his virtues and had never previously belonged to another man. Yet in the Uttarakāṇḍa, he is represented

15 PVR 7.9.21–24.
as having brutally ripped his women, wailing and crying, from their husbands, brothers, and fathers. They then collectively curse him to ultimately die on account of a woman as requital for his depredations.

Yet despite Rāvana’s lengthy career of murder, rape, and mayhem and his brutal abduction of the epic hero’s beloved wife, Rāma treats him remarkably gently. Not only does he offer to spare the rākṣasa if he returns Sītā willingly, but during their first encounter in battle the righteous prince, seeing that his foe is tiring, merely shoots off his diadem and dismisses him from the battlefield to rest up for the next encounter. Finally, once he has slain Rāvana, Rāma orders Vibhiṣaṇa to give him full funerary honors according to the vedic cremation ritual, praises him as a great warrior, and declares an almost fraternal regard for him.

It is also worth noting that, although the fearsome king of the rākṣasas is generally regarded as a figure inimical to and dominant over all other powerful beings in the three worlds and ultimately vulnerable to the Supreme Divinity, Viṣṇu, alone, the Uttarākāṇḍa records three occasions on which he is outmatched by a superior rival with whom he then forges a friendly alliance. The first and best known of these occurs when Rāvana, flying across the Himalayas, finds the motion of his vehicle arrested as he tries to pass over a grove where Lord Śiva is dallying with his wife. Enraged, the rākṣasa tries, in his unparalleled strength, to uproot the entire mountain. Śiva, however, is amused at the rākṣasa’s presumption and playfully presses down on the summit with his toe, crushing his mighty arms and causing him to utter a tremendous roar of pain. Pleased with the demon’s strength and daring, and in commemoration of his mighty cry that reverberated throughout the universe, the god confers upon him the name Rāma, “He Who Makes the Worlds Reverberate with His Cries,” thus replacing, for all practical purposes, the rākṣasa’s birth-name Daśāgriva, “Ten-necked.” This episode, along with a single reference later in the book to Rāvana’s worship of a golden līṅga, is probably the inspiration for the tradition—not explicitly mentioned by Vālmiki—that Rāvana was a devotee of Śiva.

Rāvana also meets his match in the persons of the monkey king Vālīn and the Haihaya monarch Arjuna Kārtavirya, both of whom best him in wrestling matches and take him prisoner. Both episodes end with Rāvana forming alliances with his new friends. In the former case, this may explain why Rāma forms an alliance with Sugriva rather than with Vālīn, his more powerful brother and Rāvana’s friend and ally.

**Vibhiṣaṇa**

The only virtuous child of Kaikāśi, Rāvana’s youngest brother, Vibhiṣaṇa, is one of the relatively few, but important, examples in the literature of a figure who is supposed to be evil, even demonic, by nature, but who turns out to be a paragon of virtue through first taking refuge (śaraṇam) with and then devoting himself to one or another of the forms of Viṣṇu, the Supreme Divinity. In this the rākṣasa ranks as an equal to the famous asura devotee, Prahlāda, who worshiped the Lord at the time of the Man-Lion (Narasimha) avatāra. Unable to tolerate his brother’s evil ways and particularly his abduction and imprisonment of Sītā, Vibhiṣaṇa has the courage to speak truth to power in rebuking Rāvana. This provokes a furious response: the rākṣasa king expels him from the court.
VIbhīṣaṇa then flies with four retainers across the sea to the southern shore of India, where Rāma and his army are encamped. He takes refuge (śaṇam) at Rāma’s feet, becoming, up until the present day, a paradigmatic example of salvation through this act. Once accepted, he renders many vital services to Rāma in the battle through his understanding of the military strength and defenses of Laṅkā, and especially through his innate ability to see through the many illusory devices and tricks of the rākṣasas. Rāma consecrates him as the king of the rākṣasas, even before defeating and killing Rāvaṇa, and the grateful rākṣas grants him the use of his flying palace, the Puṣpaka. In the end, like that other great devotee of Rāma, Hanumān, VIbhīṣaṇa is denied permission to follow his Lord into the heavenly world, as Rāma orders him to remain on earth to govern the unruly rākṣasas. In this way, VIbhīṣaṇa, like the great monkey, joins the select group of the seven immortals of Indian legend, the cīrāvins, “long-lived ones.”

VIbhīṣaṇa’s character, however, is not without a touch of ambivalence. Although he is highly regarded for his righteousness and courage in going over to Rāma’s side in the war, he also earns a certain degree of censure in the Indian cultural context—which places a high premium on clan and family loyalty—for his betrayal of his own elder brother, no matter how evil he may have been. Thus, even in modernity, he is sometimes used as metaphor for a traitor to his own family, as in the Bengali saying “ghore śotru bibhīṣon,” “[he is] an enemy in the house, a VIbhīṣaṇa”.

KUMBHAKARNA
Rāvaṇa’s gargantuan brother Kumbhakarṇa is an example of Vālmiki’s spectacular linking of the terrifying and comedic in a single character. He is so catastrophically voracious that the gods fear that, should he succeed in gaining additional powers through a boon for his austerities, he might literally devour the entire world. To avert this calamity, they trick him by getting the goddess of speech, Sarasvatī, to enter the giant’s mouth, seize control of his vocal organs, and choose a boon for him. She chooses perpetual sleep, a boon the Creator happily confers.

During the war, when almost all of Rāvaṇa’s champions have been slain, the rākṣasa king is forced to awaken the sleeping giant. His awakening is described in a grotesque and comically hyperbolic scene representing the extraordinary violence required to rouse the monster and the absurd amount of food and drink required to get him up and going. Once awake, he reports to his brother Rāvaṇa for his orders and, rather surprisingly, lectures him on statecraft, righteousness, and the folly of his ways. This elicits Rāvaṇa’s only admission in the poem that it was a fatal error to abduct Sitā and to refuse Rāma’s demand for her return. Nonetheless, as a dutiful brother, Kumbhakarṇa marches off to war and wreaks enormous havoc on the monkey army before being cut to pieces by Rāma’s arrows. Even in his death he is massively destructive, his severed head and body, in the poet’s hyperbolic description, causing enormous damage as they fall.

INDRAJIT
The most powerful and terrifying of Rāvaṇa’s allies—and indeed, his ultimate recourse other than his own immense martial power—is his son Meghānāda Rāvaṇi, who is often referred to by his nom de guerre, Indrajit, “Conqueror of
Indra.” This is a figure who combines the skill and strength of a superb warrior with the magical powers of a sorcerer. Indeed, when a group of seers and sages arrives to congratulate Rāma on his consecration, they remark that they regarded Indrajit as a more fearsome adversary than his father. Deriving his powers both from boons and from weapons granted him by Brahmā and through a series of dark parodies of the vedic sacrifice, he is able to capture Hanumān, bind Rāma and Lakṣmana in the deadly coils of his serpent-weapons, and invisibly strike down the heroic brothers and their entire army from a flying chariot. It is only when Lakṣmana is able to interrupt the dark ritual that grants Indrajit his powers that the prince can finally dispatch him after a lengthy and horrific duel.

This extraordinary figure, sinister though he is, has to a certain extent captured the imagination of India, where the name Indrajit is often conferred by parents on their sons and who was made the wronged and tragic hero of his own epic poem by the nineteenth-century Bengali poet and playwright Michael Madhusudana Dutt in his epic poem the Meghnad Badh Kāvyā, “The Killing of Meghanāda.”

The Minor Rākṣasas

Aside from the towering figure of Rāvaṇa and some of his principal kinsmen, generals, and ministers, a number of other rākṣasas play various roles in the epic story from outside the Laṅkan court. One group constitutes a sort of military outpost of the rākṣasa kingdom in the Daṇḍaka forest of the Indian peninsula. It is these rākṣasa forces, led by Rāvana’s relatives Khaṇ, Dūṣaṇ, and Triśiras, that directly harass the holy forest sages, whom Rāma has vowed to protect. And it is they and their hosts who, seeking to avenge the mutilation of Śūrpaṇahā, are slaughtered by Rāma. One noteworthy figure is Mārica. Along with his brother Subāhu, Mārica harasses the ashram of Viśvāmitra in the Bālakāṇḍa, thus providing the rationale for Viśvāmitra’s fateful journey to Ayodhya. His life is spared by Rāma when his brother is slain, but he returns to the narrative in the Aranyakāṇḍa. There, under the threat of death from his master Rāvaṇa, he is compelled to take on the form of the famous golden deer to lure first Rāma and then Lakṣmana away from their forest home, only to be finally slain by the former.

In addition to these figures, there is also a class of grotesque, solitary rākṣasa who haunt the forest, gorging on game and even humans. Some of these are represented not as true rākṣasas by birth but rather as celestial beings who, laboring under curses, inhabit their degraded forms until they are released through death at Rāma’s hands and return to their respective celestial forms. These rākṣasas, encountered in the Aranyakāṇḍa, include the monstrous Virādha, who for a brief moment seizes and tries to run off with Sitā, in a foreshadowing of her abduction by Rāvaṇa; and the deformed Kabandha, who, before his death, directs Rāma to the monkey prince Sugrīva for assistance in locating and recovering his stolen wife. The poem’s final book, the Uttarakāṇḍa, shows us another example of the solitary rākṣasa in the terrifying Lavana, who is slain by Śatrughna.

The Rākṣasa Women

Like their menfolk, the rākṣasa women (rākṣasis) show a marked diversity of character among themselves. Rāma’s first test of valor is his task of killing the monstrous forest rākṣasa woman Tāṭakā, who blocks the path of Viśvāmitra and...
Index

abducted: of child, 477, 732 (see also child(ren)); of Laṅkā by rākṣasas, 731, 740, 744; of Śitā by Rāma, 6, 17–19, 794–98 abducted women: curse Rāvana, 16, 29–30; grief of, 762–63
abduction: of daughters of serpents, yaksas, rākṣasas, men, dairyas, and dānavaś by Rāvana, 5, 16, 762–63; of Kumbhānas by Madhu, 765; of Śaci by Anuḥlāda, 396; of Śitā by Rāvana, 12–15, 24, 30, 32, 52, 56, 320–27;—Brahmā witnesses, 324;—creatures seem to mourn, 325;—crow foretells, 351;—foreshadowing of, 30;—Jātāyas attempts to stop, 13, 321–23;—monkeys witness, 326–27;—as pivotal event of poem, 12;—prophecy of, by Niśākara, 422;—Rāvana plots, 303–4;—recalled, 355–57; 413, 434, 482, 519–20, 787;—witnesses to, 420;—by Virādhā, 12, 32, 52, 265–267;—recalled, 460, 677; of Takṣaka’s wife, by Rāvana, 299; of wife of Śuṅgī, 361; of women by Rāvana, 16, 29, 30, 762–63
Abhijit: quarter facing, 423
abhismit (rite), 68
Abhīra: region to be searched by southern search party, 402
adharma. See unrighteousness
Ādūrta-arajaṇa: son of Kuśa (2), 84
adhyāyas (chapters): of Mahābhārata, 9n
Ādikavi, First Poet: Vālmīki, as, 4
Ādikāvyā, First Poem: Rāmāyana, as, 4
Aditi: gives birth to Dhārti, 230;—to gods, 97–98, 280, 744;—to Viṣṇu, 82; Indra son of, 71; Mārutas son of, 785; Rāma as son of, 849; sister of Diti, 744; Vāyu (Mārutas) son of, 785; wife of Kaśyapa, 280, 744
Ādītya (sun god), 403, 780. See also Sūrya
ādītya(s) (class of divinities): 280, 403, 455, 768, 770–71, 772, 842; sons of Aditi, accept Surā, 98
Aeneid, 3
Agastya (brahman), 166; ascetic power of, 277, 279; associated with southern quarter, 181, 276, 407, 707, 728; attends Rāma’s aśvamedha, 841; austerities of, 823; birth of, from a pot, 804; curses Mārīca and Tātaka, 78; celestial ornament, accepts from Śveta;—gives to Rāma, 824;—made by Viśvakarman, 824;—Rāma accepts, 726; deeds of, recounted, 276–77; describes austerities of Rāvana and his brothers, 742; directs Rāma to Paṅcavaṭi, 279; encounter of, with Ilvala and Vātāpi, 275–76, 312; etymology of name of, 275; fasting of, 277; gives celestial jewel/ornament to Rāma, 824;—arrow and quivers of Indra to Rāma, 278; gods instruct Rāma to visit ashram of, 823; identifies Rāma as Viṣṇu, 740; makes south safe from rākṣasas, 276; monkeys see, on Mount Malayā, 401; places Mahendra on southern shore, 401; as pot-born sage, 729, 823, 824, 827, 829; praises Hanumān, 787; praises Śitā, 278–79; Rāma asks Sūtikṣṇa directions to ashram of, 274–75;—dwells in heart of, 824;—gives gifts to, 166;—receives divine weapons from, 278;—visits ashram of, with gods, 17, 18, 823–29;—visits ashram of, with Lakṣmaṇa and Śitā, 277–79; region of, 181; reminds Rāma that he killed Vālin, 782; role of, in Uttarakāṇḍa, 16–17, 19, 26, 29; tells cautionary tales, 16–17;—of Daṇḍa, 826–28;—of Śveta, 824–26; tells history of celestial ornament/jewel, 824–26;—desolation of the Daṇḍaka Forest, 826–28;—Hanumān’s childhood, 783–87;—rākṣasas, Rāvana, and Rāvaṇa’s kin, 16–17, 729–82; Sūtikṣṇa directs Rāma to ashram of, 275; tells genealogy of Kubera, 729–33; Viśvakarman builds palace for, 401; on women’s nature, 279
Agastya’s brother: ashram of, 52, 275–76
Agni (god of fire), 108, 114, 188, passim: Anala name of, 612; banner of, smoke, 188; as bearer or eater of oblations, 282, 514, 516, 564, 578, 708, 793; divine weapon or weapon-spell (astra) of, 80, 108, 606–7, 639, 653, 685, 751; does not harm Hanumān, 514;—Śitā, 516; dwells in Arjuna’s firepit, 775; Ganges gives birth to child of, 732; gods worship Viṣṇu with, 854; as having golden seed, 775; Indrajit sacrifices to, 641; Indrajit

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
Agni (god of fire) (continued)
worships, 773; as leader of gods, 817, 823, 832; as purohita of the gods, 89; role of, in Skanda's birth, 89–90, 559; and Śiva's semen, 88–89; Śiṣṭa enters, 708;—prays to, 513–14; as Vaśivasnāra, 785; as witness, 356, 358, 359, 523, 793, 782;—of nonaggression pact of Arjuna-Rāvaṇa, 780;—of Rāvaṇa-Nīvatākavacas alliance, 761;—of Śiṣṭa's ordeal by fire, 708, 710; words of, to Ganges, 89;—to Indra, 101 as wrathful, 767; Yama attended by, 757 aghnihotra (rite), 28, 87, 104, 105, 119, 174, 189, 211, 229, 262, 268, 306, 567, 571, 741, 786, 853 aghniparīkṣa. See ordeal by fire aṅgīṣṭoma (sacrifice), 567, 764, 845 agriculture: increases in Dvāpara Yuga, 821 Ahāyā: austerities of, 100; Brahmā creates, 774; etymology of name of, 774; Gautama curses, 101, 774; Indra rapes, 774;—seduces, 100–101; loses distinction as only beautiful woman, 774–75; story of, in Bālakāṇḍa, 100–102;—in Uttararākāṇḍa, 774–75 Aiksvākā(ś): Daśaratha, 121, 145, 167, 169, 171; Kurus, 36; Rāma, 77, 182, 184; Rāma and Laksmaṇa, 342 Airāvata (elephant), 290, 299; Hanumān mistakes, for fruit, 784; Indra seeks Hanumān on, 784; as mount of Indra, 290, 444, 517, 540, 635, 772; son of Irāvati, 280; Sudarśana born in lineage of, 630; as world guardian, 280 Airāvata (mountain), 206 Aīṣika (weapon-spell): of Atikāya, 639 ajas or ājas (class of ascetics), 302–3 Ājātaśatru (king of Magadha): defeats janapada of Kosalā, 36 Akampāna (rākṣasa troop leader) (1), Hanumān fights and kills, 596–98; killing of recalled, 715, 728; leads rākṣasa troops into battle, 596–97; minister of Rāvaṇa, 769; Rāvaṇa hears of death of, 599; son of Sumālin and Ketumatt, 734 Akampāna (rākṣasa troop leader) (2), 603, 668 Aḵa (son of Rāvaṇa): Hanumān fights and kills, 53, 504–6; Rāvaṇa sends to fight Hanumān, 503 Alanbūṣā (gandharva woman), 227–28 Alanbūṣā (mother of Viśāla), 99 Alarka: gives his eyes to brahman, 145 alliance: of Rāma and Sugriva, 13, 25, 356, 367; of Rāvaṇa and Nīvatākavacas, 761 ally/allies: Bharata assembles, to aid Rāma, 787; of Bharata, 240; of Daśaratha, 74, 84; dismissal of, by Rāma, 17, 787–89; Guha as, of Kosalan court, 41; of House of Ikyāvūkā, 226, 254; Jaṭāyus as, of Kosalan court, 24; Kabandha makes, known to Rāma, 344–45; Kumbhakarna devours, 626; Laksmaṇa as, of Rāma, 249; monkeys as Rāma's, 15, 70, 393, 495, 535; Pratardana as, of Rāma, 787; of Rāma, 19, 24, 488, 705, 707–8, 711, 713, 719; Rāma and Sugriva as, 358, 367, 384, 392–93, 396, 483, 486, 488, 522–23, 590, 715; of Rāvaṇa, 31, 323, 488; Sugriva and Viśvīṣṇa as Rāma's closest, 699; of Sugriva, 384, 590; treatment of, 384–85; Viśvīṣṇa as, of Rāma, 5, 15, 56, 551–52, 702; of Viśvāmitra, 104 alms: daughter as, 730 Amarāvati (Indra's heaven), 58–59, 437, 439, 575, 630, 650, 716, 731, 734, 746, 755, 780; Laṅkā compared to, 319 Ambaraśa, 252; genealogy of, 122; sacrifice of, 113–14 ambush: of Vālīn by Rāma, 13, 368 Aṃśūman (name for the sun), 349 Aṃśūman (son of Asamaṇja), 96; attains heaven, 94; genealogy of, 122, 252; searches for Sagara's horse, 93–94; son of Asamaṇja, 91, 93; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 94 amulets: of Kusa, 159; Vālmiki gives, to Lava and Kuśa, 813 Anala. See Agni Anala (rākṣasa): minister of Viśvīṣṇa, 573; son of Mālīn, 734 Analah (1): one of Daśa's sixty daughters, 280; brings forth fruit trees, 280 Analah (2): relates information to Sītā, 498; Viśvīṣṇa's eldest daughter, 489 Analah (3): as daughter of Mālīyavān and Sundari, 734; as granddaughter of Mālīyavān, 765; mother of Kumbhinasī, 765, 808 Ananta (thousand-headed god), 399 Anarānya: father of Ptṛhu 122, 252; Rāvaṇa fights and kills, 16, 755–56 Anasūyā (ascetic woman), 56; advises Sītā on visibly duties and devotions, 260; asceticism of, 259; audience of, with Sītā, 259–63; created roots and fruits and caused the Jāhnavi to flow, 259; description of, 259; gives gifts to Sītā, 261; reduced ten nights to one, 259; Sītā tells, about birth and marriage, 261–62; wife of Atri, 259 ancestor(s): of Bhagiratha, flooded with water, 96; Dilīpa unable to save, 94 Andhaka, (asura), 298, 581, 736
Andhra: region searched by southern search party, 400

Anila (wind god), 427, 455, 505; Hanumān son of, 453, 564, 606, 624, 634, 635, 650 animals: as rākṣasa mounts, 736, 765, 771; eating of five-clawed, 370; gods take on forms of, 754; of Rāmāyana, 24–26

Anjānā: ability of, to take form at will, 425–26; an apsaras (Puṣjikasthalā), 425; infatuation of Mārūta with, 426; mother of Hanumān, 426, 643, 783, 786; story of, 425–26; wife of Kesārī, 425, 783, 786

Anjāna (guardian elephant [diggaja]), 60, 733, 776, 778

Anjāna (mountain), 394

another birth. See birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation antelope skin. See black antelope(s): wearing of hide of

Anuṣṭubh (type of meter), 8

apes (rākṣas), 189, 231–32, 243, passim; birth of, 70–71, 854; Dūḥrā leader of, 397, 559, 580, 622; gods take form as, 70–71; Jāmbavān as king of, 27, 540, 573–74, 591, 661–62, 658, 668, 672, 682, 788; live in Ayodhyā, 788; not native to Indian subcontinent, 46–47; number of, 393, 580; and Rāma, 789, 792, 844, 845, 852, 853; Rāma gives gifts to, 788; return to birth places, 854–55; seek protection of Vālīn, 377; Sugrīva as lord of, 384, 486; Tārā as protector of, 375, translation of rākṣas as, 46–47. See also langur(s); monkeys

apsaras(es), 96, 125, 127, passim; Bharadvāja invokes, to entertain Bharata, 227, 228; dānavas will not accept, 98; etymology of word, 98; Ghrṭācī (see Ghrṭācī); gods father sons on, 70; Hemā (see Hemā); Kumbhakarṇa devours seven, 743; Menakā (see Menakā); Paṅcāpsaras lake of five, 274; produced from the churning of the ocean, 98; Puṣjikasthalā, 425 (see also Anjānā); Rambhā (see Rambhā); Urvāśī (see Urvāśī)

aptoryāma rite, 68

Arajā (daughter of Uśānas): as Bhārgava girl, 827; Daṇḍa rapes, 827–28; Uśānas Kāvyā curses, 878ā

Aranyakaṇḍa, 9, 24, 32, 44, 264–350; synopsis of, 12–13

Aranyakaparvan, 36

Ariṣṭa (mountain): Hanumān’s return leap from, 516–18

Ariṣṭanemin (sage), 837

Arjuna Kārtavīrya: blocks flow of Narmadā, 777; captures Rāvāṇa, 779; defeats ministers of Rāvāṇa, 778; falls Prahasta in battle, 778; fights and defeats Rāvāṇa, 16, 26, 30, 777–78; as king of Haihayas,
Arjuna Kārtavīrya (continued)
775, 778, 780; ministers of, 775, 777–78; nonaggression pact of, with Rāvana, 780, puṟohitas (of (see puṟohitas): of Arjuna Kārtavīrya); releases Rāvana, 780; story of, 775–80
army. See monkey army; rākṣasa army; southern search party
arrow(s): Agastya gives, to Rāma, 278; Brahmā gives, to Indra, 278, 298; extended simile of, of Rāma, 628;—of Rāvana, 605;—of Viṣṇu, 737; Indra gives, 298;—to Agastya, 278; of Indrajit fell monkeys, 642–43;—pierce Lakṣmaṇa and Rāma, 584–85, 654–55;—serpent sons of Kadrū become, 592; of Kāma (see Kāma: arrows of); Nila extracts, from Vāin, 377; of Rāma (see also Rāma: arrow(s) of); Rāma splits seven sāla trees with, 53, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; of Śatrughna enters Rasātāla, 817; shape-shifting of, 583, 592, 690;—of Rāma, 690, 853; of Viṣṇu, 127–28, 817;—Rāma gives to Śatrughna, 810
Arthatādha (minister of Daśaratha), 60
Aruru (bird): father of Sampāti, 281; Sampāti son of, 486; son of Vinātā, 280–81
Aruru (mountain), 394
Arundhati: as exemplar of wifely obedience, 260; Śitā compared to, 279, 481; Śitā superior to, 701
Aryaman (name of an Āditya), 158
āryan civilization, 27–28
Aryan clans, 35
āryan conduct, 448, 452
Aryan culture, 28
Aryan kings, 133
Aryan society, 40
Āṣādha: month of, 383
Asaṃjā, 122; Aṃśumant son of, 91; drowns children in Sarayū, 91, 170; father of Aṃśumant, 93; genealogy of, 152, 252; Sagara dispossesses, 170, 252; son of Sagara and Keśinī, 91
Asaṇiprabha: Dvividā fights and kills, 581–82
ascetic(s), 12, 54, 58, passim; abduction of Śitā witnessed by, 324; appeal to Rāma for protection, 12, 258; ashrams of, in Dandaka wilderness, 264, 271, 274 (see also ashram(s)); austerities of (see austerities): Bharata as, 16, 23, 214; Bharata wears clothing of, 257–58, 718; brahmans as, 263, 821, 845, passim; Daśaratha shoots, 198–99; Durvāsas as, 799, 850; duty of, toward guests, 278; emerges from Nimi’s body, 805; fasting of, 264, 302, 348; fear rākṣasas, 273; forest devoid of, 824; foretell Śabari’s meeting with Rāma, 348; Garuḍa rescues 302–3; Hanumān vows to become, 455; Kāla in guise of, 848; Kumbhakarna as, 742; Lavaṇa oppresses, 809; live near Ganges, 796;—in Janasthāna, 838; Mārica as, 307; Mārica harrasses, 306; who mistreats guests eats own flesh in next world, 278, 825–26; Niśākara as, 421–22; practices of, 268–69; protection of, as duty of kings, 264–65, 269 (see also duty of: of king with advisors); rākṣasas kill, 269; Rāma and Śitā approached by, 264; Rāma as, 144, 152, 175, 209, 237, 258, 306, 466, 566;—gives donations to, 845;—protects, 269, 273;—wears clothing of, 170 (see also barkcloth garments); Rāma’s vow to, accomplished, 298; Rāvana as false, 314–17; Śambūka as, 822; seats fit for, 807; seek Rāma’s protection, 12, 258, 264–65, 269, 273; 807–9; show hospitality to Rāma, 264–65; Śitā desires to visit, 791; Vasiṣṭha as, 799; Vibhiṣaṇa as, 742; visit Sutikṣṇa, 269; in Yamunā region, 807. See also ajas or ājas
asceticism (tapas), 29, 41, 51, passim; of Anasūyā, 259; of Bhagiratha, 94; of Bharadvāja, 717; of Bharata, 214, 718; black antelope skin as mark of, 752, 764; destroyed by possessing weapons, 272; of Gautama, 101, 774; of Indrajit Meghnāda, 661, 764, 773; of Māṇḍakarnī, 274; of Maya, 412, 746; of Meruśavīrṇī, 403; of Niśākara, 421–22; practice of, and kṣhatriya class incongruous, 272; of Rāvana, 29, 511, 742–43; of Śabari, 347–48; of Śambūka, 18, 822; of Śarabhaṅga, 267; of Śitā, 516; of Śiva, 89; social class (varṇa) and yuga restrictions on, 821–22; of Sutikṣṇa, 270; of Svayamprabhā, 413; of Vedavati, 752–53; of Viśravas, 730–31; of Viśvāmitra, 41, 76; of women, 797; Vālmiki gains insight through, 797. See also austerities
ascetic power, 277, 279; ability to kill rākṣasas with, 273; of Gautama, 101; of Indra, 502; of Māṇḍakarni, 274; of sages at Pampā, 347; of Umā, 87–88
ascetic practice (tapas): being underwater as, 765, 823; deprivation as, 299, 742; of the five fires, 110, 115, 742; hanging upside down as, 822; heroic posture as, 742; living on air as, 730; living on water as, 730; raising arms as, 94, 115, 742, 836; sleeping upside down in water as, 365; standing without support as,
ascetic women: live near Vālmiki’s ashram, 797. See also Anasūyā; Pārvatī; Śabarī; Svyamprabhā; Vedavatī

ashram(s): 104, 113, 258, passim; of Agastyā, 17, 18, 275, 276, 277, 278, 823–24; of Agastya’s brother, 275; of ascetic family, 199; of ascetics in Daṇḍaka wilderness, 264, 271, 274, passim; of Atri, 259–63, 716; of Bali, 81–82; of Bharadvāja, 188–89, 221, 225–30, 255, 716; of Budha, 836–37; of courtesans, 62; of Cyavana, 814; of Durvāsas, 850; of the great Dwarf (vāmana) (see ashram(s): of Bali this entry); of Gautama, 100–101, 774, 802; of Gokarna, 742; on Gomati River, 795; of Kāma, 76–77; of Kubera Vaśīravaṇa, 730–31, 748; of Mataṅga on Rśyāmūka, 363, 408; of Niśākara, 421; of Pulastya, 730; of Rāma, 52, 189–90, 230, 236, 242–43, 281, 279, 284, 287, 304, 309–10, 323–24, 720; of Śabarā, 348; sages and Rāma abandon, 258–59; of Śarabhaṅga, 267; of Śiva, 77; of Sutikṣṇa, 270, 274; of the Saṭpajanas, 365–66; of Trāṇābindu, 729–30; of Usānas Kāvyā, 827–28; of vaikhānasa ascetics in northern quarter, 405; of Vālmiki, 6, 9, 17, 18, 19, 38, 55, 794–98, 800.—Lava and Kuśa live in, 57;—Śrātrughna hears recitation of Rāma-yaṇa in, 818–19;—Śrātrughna visits, 18, 812–14;—Sitā abandoned at, 975–98, 842;—Sitā gives birth in, 813; of Vasiṣṭha, 104–5, 107–8, 110, 798–99; Vibhāndaka, 62; of Viśvāmitra, 10, 13, 32, 40, 80, 82, 115, 305 (see also Ashram of The Perfected Being); women of, 797; Yāyāti enters, 807 Ashram of the Perfected Being, 81–86, 100, 103; Rāma visits, 81–87

Aśmanagara (city): Rāvaṇa conquers, 761 Aśoka (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204 aśoka(s) (tree[s]), 281, 310, 330, passim; Sitā clings to, 472–73, 482 aśoka grove: description of, of Rāvaṇa, 456–58; etymology of word, 334; Hanumān devastates, 498;—searches, 456–58; of Rāma, 725, 790–91; resembles young woman, 456 astrologers: 65, 135; foretell Sitā’s future, 588 asura(s), 68, 75, 60, passim; Aṅgada kills, 409–10; as buffalo (see Dundubhi); Jayā bore fifty sons called Saṃhāras to destroy, 75; weapon-speels of, 685; etymology of word, 98; inhabit Pātāla, 432 aśvamedha (horse sacrifice), 18, 35, 356, 833; Agastya at Rāma’s, 841; dear to Śiva, 837; of Daśaratha, 61, 64–71, 238, 356;—Kauśalyā’s role in, 67; feeding of brahmans during, 66–67, 838; gods perform, for Indra, 832–33; of Ila, 837; Lakṣmana tells Rāma to perform, 833; Maheśvara tells Rāma to perform, 711; performed by Marutta, 837;—for obtaining sons, 61; purifies sin of brahmahatyā, 830–33; of Rāma, 18–19, 711, 726, 799, 837–45; of Sagara, 91–92

Aśvapati, 207; Bharata and Śatrughna live with, 130 Aśvapati (father of Kaikēyī). See Kaikēyī: daughter of Aśvapati Aśvapati (maternal uncle of Bharata), 130, 206, 845 Aśvapati (Yudhājīt): king of Kekaya, 206 Aśvins, 75, 100, 103, passim; Dviviḍa and Mainḍa sons of, 397, 525, 564 Atibāla (mantra): Viśvāmitra gives to Rāma, 76 Atikāya (rākṣasa), 547, 603, 628, passim; Aṣṭika divine weapon of, 639; army of slaughtered, 635; battles monkey army, 637; Brahmā grants boons to, 635–36; challenges Rāma, 637; chariot of, 630, 636–38; compared to Viṣṇu, 635; description of, 636–37; joins battle, 637; eager for battle, 629–30; Kumbhakarna paternal uncle of, 628; Lakṣmana fights and kills, 637–40;—recalled, 715; leads rākṣasas into battle, 629–30; Rāma questions Viśvāmitra about, 736; son of Rāvaṇa, 630; terrifies monkey army with sound of bow, 635 atirātra (sacrifice), 67, 68, 645, 845 Atri, ashram of, 259–63, 716; Durvāsas son of, 798; Nimi asks, to perform sacrifice, 802; one of the seven great seers, 728 auspicious glow, 791; as sign of life (vital glow), 586, 589, 824; as sign of pregnancy, 791 auspicious omen(s): clockwise direction as, 641, 653; Hanumān observes, 515; presage victory for Rāma, 478, 540–41; Sitā observes, 478, 481; Trījāṭā observes in dream, 376. See also inauspicious omen(s) auspicious signs: of abducted women, 764; all were endowed with, 727; bindi as, 282, 325; children of Krodhavaśā bear, 280; of Kuśa and Lava, 57; Lakṣmana, one of, 179, 184, 332, 344, 383, 386, 395, 485, 553, 655, 660, 662, 665, 671, 688, 792, 809, 822; of Prajāpati’s servant, 69; Rāma marked with, 51, 485–86;—observes, 693; of sacrificial horse, 837–38; Sitā marked with, 588; of royal elephant, 160
austerities, 10, 18, 69, passim; absence of, when dead as source of regret, 750; of ascetics, 268–69; of Bhagiratha, 94; of Bharata, 283; of Budha, 835, 836; of Daśaratha, 339; of Diti, 98–99; eating once a month as, 94; of five fires, 94; of Gautama and Ahalyā, 100; javelin of Maya gained through, 746; of Kubera Vaśravaṇa, 730–31; of Kumbhakarna, 742; of Kuśānābha’s daughters, 85; of Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733; performed underwater, 765, 823; as permissible for various social classes, 821–22; of Rāvana 742–43; raising arms as, 94, 115, 742, 836; of Śambuṅka, 822; of Śarabhaṅga, 268; of Śiva and Umā, 87–88; of Suketu, 78; of Sutiksṇa, 270; of Śveta, 825–26; of Trāmbindu, 729; of Vaśravaṇa related to Rāvana, 748; of Vālmiki, 797, 842; of Vedavati, 752–53; of Vībhishāṇa 742; of Vīṣṇumitra, 107–17; of Vytra, 831; women engaged in, 797. See also asceticism; ascetic practice auto-decapitation: Brahmā stops Rāvana’s, 299, 742–43 autumn, 381, 382, 384. passim; commencement of, 385, 389; description of, 386 āvartin: spell: Budha recites, 835 āvatāra (incarnation): theory of, 4–5, 5n, 21, 38 āvatāra (incarnation) of Viṣṇu: Buddha as, 21; to kill Rāvana, 10; Krṣṇa as, 35, 40; Narasimha (Man-Lion) as, 30; Rāma as, 4, 5n, 9, 11, 35, 40; Rāma Jāmadagnya (Paraśurāma) as, 21; sons of Daśaratha as, 4 avis ex machina, Garuḍa as, 24 Ayodhaya, 10, 36, 58–60, 128, 137–38, 206–7, 256–57; grief of, 174–75, 185, 191–92, 194 Ayodhyākāṇḍa, 130–263; synopsis of, 9, 11–12 Babhru (gandharva lord), 402 Bahlī/Bahlīka, 204; horses of, 60; kingdom of, ruled by Iła, 833–37; western search party sent to, 402, 404 Bahlīkas, 833 bahusuvarnaka (sacrifice): of Indrajīt, 764 Balā (mantra): Viṣṇumitra gives to Rāma, 75 Bālakāṇḍa, 51–129; synopsis of, 9–11 bali (offerings): dogs eating, as inauspicious omen, 571 Bali Vairocana (asura), 145, 335, 640, 649; and Indra, 768, 772, 777; Jāmbavān at sacrifice of, 424; Rāma as Viṣṇu at sacrifice of, 710; story of, 81–82; and Viṣṇu (Nārāyana), 779 bandins (panegyристs), 35 banishment. See abandonment; exile bards (sūtas), 137, 148, 159, passim; Lava and Kuśa as, 6, 10, 17–19, 840–42, 844, 851–52 barkcloth garments, 162, 198, 233, 262, 264, 270, 274, 276, 333, 348, 786; of Bharata, 224, 244, 258, 718, 722, 809; of Kuśa, 840; of Laksmaṇa, 186, 222, 265, 286, 353–54, 482, 485; of Lava, 840; of Mārica, 303; of Rāma, 11, 144, 150, 155, 170, 182, 186, 208, 209, 222, 237, 242, 245, 265, 286, 301, 307, 322, 353–54, 466, 485, 566, 717, 719, 809; of Sītā, 170–71; of Svayamprabhā, 412; of Vālmiki, 54 battle-standard(s), 234, 256, 289, passim; of Akampa marked with king of beasts, 603; of Bharata marked with kovidā tree, 220, 235; of Indrajīt described, 664; of Kumbha marked with king of serpents, 604; of Rāvana marked with human head, 685.—Nila perches on tip of, 606–7; of Prahabha, serpent, 600 bear: Jāmbavān as, 27 beheading: of charioteer of Indrajīt, 669;—of Sumālin, 738; gods plead with Viṣṇu for, of rākṣasas, 118, 735; of Indrajīt, 670–71; Indrajīt threatens, of Laksmaṇa, 665; of Kumbhakarna, 31, 628; of Mahākāpāla, 293; of Mahodara, 682; of Mālin, 739; of monkeys, 643, 679; of Nikumbha, 582; of Prahabha by means of shattering, 602; of rākṣasas, 293, 739; Rāma threatens, of Rāvana, 692; of Rāvana, 697, 742–43; Rāvana falsely tells Sītā of, of Rāma, 565; of Śambuṅka by Rāma 822–23; of Śṛiśiras, 295, 635; of Vytra (comparison), 628. See also auto-decapitation Bhadra (companion of Rāma): tells Rāma of rumors of Sītā, 791–92 Bhadra (one of the elephants who support the earth), 93 Bhaga (god of marriage), 123, 734 Bhaga (name of an Āditya/planet), 158, 278, 736 Bhagavadgīta, 15, 35, 38; relationship of, to Mahābhārata, 15, 35; as Vaiṣṇava work, 35 Bhagiratha: ancestors of, flooded with water, 96, austerities of, 94; Brahmā grants boon to, 95; genealogy of, 122, 252; offers funeral libations to sons of Sagara, 97 Bhāgirathī. See Ganges Bharadvāja (disciple): of Vālmiki, 54–55 Bharadvāja (sage): 237; ashram of, 188–89, 221, 225–30, 255, 716; audience of, with Rāma, 52, 56, 188–90, 716–17; Bharata
and entourage visit, 225–31, 255–56; Devavarṇīni, daughter of, 730; directs Rāma to Citrakūṭa, 189–90; gives daughter as wife to Viśravas, 730; as one of the seven seers, 728; as seer, 841

Bharata: “Tale of the Bhāratas,” 36

Bharata (son of Daśaratha), 10, 11, 52, passim; accompanies Rāma on final journey, 853; advises Rāma not to perform rāja-sūya, 830; agrees to serve as regent, 12; anger of Lakṣmaṇa toward, 266; army of, battles gandharvas, 846–47; arrives at Ayodhyā, 207; as Rāma’s co-avatāra, 4, 22; returns to Ayodhyā, 256–57, 788, 847; reviles Kaikeyī, 209–11; righteousness of, 370–71; reunion of, with Rāma, 722–23; sees tell to agree to Rāma’s request, 254; Sītā’s suspicion toward, 314, 333; story of Indra and Vṛtra told to, 830–31; summoned back to Ayodhyā, 12; takes Rāma’s sandals, 52, 56, 255; threatens to fast against Rāma, 253; tells Rāma of victory over gandharvas, 847; urges Rāma to be consecrated, 244–45, 247–48; Vasiṣṭha urges, to undergo consecration, 218; visits Bharadvaja’s ashram, 225–31;—maternal uncle’s, 11, 130; wants to kill Lavaṇa, 809; wedding of, 125; wives of, 853; Yudhājit as maternal uncle of, 124, 845–46;—takes, to his home, 130

Bharata (son of Dhruvasandhi), 122, 252

Bhāratas: vedic clan associated with the Mahābhārata, 35–36

Bharatas, northern quarter location of country of, 404

Bhārgava: Arājā as daughter of, 827; Cyavana as, 807–8, 814, 841; Devayāṇi as daughter of, 805–6; Uṣanās Kāvyas as, 541, 805–6, 827–28; Vālmikis as, 840. See also Bhṛgu

Bhāṣakarṇa (Rāma’s field marshal): Hanumān fights and kills, 503

Bhāṭṭi-kāvyā (Rāvaṇavadha), 41

Bhava. See Śiva

Bhāyā (sister of Kāla): Heti marries, 732

Bhikṣu (gandharva lord), 402

Bhogavatī (city of serpents), 237, 299, 401, 437, 439, 760

Bṛgu: Cyavana son of, 837; grants Sāgara a boon, 90; lineage of, 786; makes Nimi’s consciousness return to his body, 804–5; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802; Viṣṇu kills wife of, 79. See also Bhārgava

Bṛgus: curse Hanumān, 786; Cyavana delight of, 814

Bhūti (goddess of prosperity), 315

Bhūti, 3

Big Bang theory, 37

Big Crunch theory, 37

Biṣa (heart), Sundarakāṇḍa as, of Rāma-yāna, 15

Binary, characters of Rāma-yāna constructed as, 20

birth(s): attendants during, 813; of Agastya from a pot, 804; of apes, 70–71, 854; of Asamaṇja, 91; of birds, 280; of daityas,
birth(s) (continued)
280, 744; of Dundubhi and Māyavin, 746; expiation of misdeeds in former, 329; of gods, 280, 744; of Hanumān, 425–26, 783; of Indrajit (Meghanāda), 747; of Janaka from Nimi’s body, 805; of Kaikasi’s sons, 741; of Kubera Vaishravana, 730; of Kumbhakarṇa, 28–29, 741; of langurs, 70–71; of Lava and Kuṣa, 17, 813; of Mālin, Mālayavān, and Sumālin, 733; of Māruts, 99; of monkeys, 70–71, 854; of Nimi, 804; of Pūru from Śārmiṣṭhā, 805; of Pururavas from Ilā, 836; of rākṣasas, 731–32; of Rāma and brothers, 69–71, 844; of Rāvaṇa, 28–29, 741; reaping consequences of previous, 171, 188, 473, 753, 763, 802, 820; rites of, 813; of Śambhū as śūdra, 822; of Saramā, 747; of Sītā from a furrow, 21, 118, 261, 461, 753–54, 843; of sixty thousand sons to Sagara, 91; of sons as sign of perfect kingdom, 790; of Sukeśa, 732–33; of Śūpanakāhā, 28–29, 741; of Vasiṣṭha from a pot, 804; of Vasiṣṭha from semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803; of Vedavatī, 753; of Vibhiṣaṇa, 28–29, 741; of Vidyutkeśa, 732; of Viśravas, 730; of Yadu from Devayānī, 805; of Viṣṇu (Nārāyaṇa) to slaughter rākṣasas, 740. See also reincarnation
birthday of Vālmiki: restricted holiday, 5
black antelope(s): wearing of hide of, 239, 286, 301, 303, 307, 382, 412, 718, 722, 752, 764
bodhisattva, Rāma as, 5n
bodily signs, of Rāma, 484–85; of Sītā of, 587–88
body, preservation of, in vat of oil, 202, 822
books (kāṇḍas), of Rāmāyana, 9
boon(s), 32, 107, 133, passim; Bharadvāja grants, to Rāma, 717; Bhṛgū grants, to Sagara, 90; Brahmā grants, to Bhaṭgiratha, 95;—, to Hanumān, 426, 508, 786;—to Indrajit, 583, 773–74;—to Divvīda and Mainda, 525;—to Kaibandha, 344;—to Kubera Vaishravana, 731;—to Kumbhakarṇa, 743–44;—to Mālin, Mālayavān, and Sumālin, 733, 735–36;—to Maya, 412;—to Rāvaṇa, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 327, 742–43, 760;—to Śarabhaṅga, 268;—to Vibhiṣaṇa, 743;—to Vīrāḍha, 266;—Cyavana grants, to son of Kālindī, 252; Daśaratha grants, to Kaikēyī, 11, 23, 141, 144; Dharma grants, to crow, 755; gods grant, to animals, 754–55;—to Hanumān, 785–86;—to Nimi, 805;—to Rāma, 53, 721, 823;—to Śatrughna, 817; granted to Dundubhi, 362;—the Nīvātakavac, 760; Hema grants, to Śvyamprabhū, 412; Indra grants, to Hanumān, 426, 785–86;—to peacock, 754–55;—to Rāma, 712–13, 722;—to Kaikēyī, 316, 417; Kubera grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to lizard, 755; Niśākara grants, to Sampāti, 421; Rāma grants, to ascetics, 269; of Rāvaṇa, 742–43, 745, 768, 772; Śiva grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Indrajit, 764;—to Madhu, 808–9, 811;—to Sukeśa, 733;—to Viśvāmitra, 107; Śūrya grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Mount Sumeru, 783; Umā grants half of, to Ila, 834;—to rākṣasas women, 733; Varuṇa grants, to hamsa, 755;—to Hanumān, 786; Vasiṣṭha grants, to Mitrasahā, 813 (see also Mitrasahā Saudāśa); Viśvakarman grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Nala, 554; Yama grants, to Hanumān, 786
bow(s), 223, 229, 234, passim; Agastyā gives, to Rāma, 278; of Indrajit, 507, 764; of Janaka, 83, 117–19; of Mālin, 738; of Śiva, 11, 117–19, 127; of Viṣṇu, 126–28, 278, 295–96. See also horn bow; kshatriya(s): bow of, compared to kindling
Brahmā (Prajāpati), 68, 72, 76, passim; ashrams of Daṇḍaka resemble abode of, 264; asks Indra to recall his evil deed, 774; asks Rāma to return to essential Viśāṇava form, 854;—to return to heaven, 849, 854; as baar, 251; boons of unfalsifiable, 760; calls Rāma “Viṣṇu,” 849; calms fears of divinities, 816–17;—of Rāma, 844; creates Ahalyā, 774;—all people as identical, 774;—earth with sons, 251;—Lake Mānasas, 77;—rākṣasas and yakṣas, 732;—rod of Kāla, 760;—the waters, 732; “Creator” as part of Trimūrti, 34–35; denies immortality to Indrajit, 773;—to Rāvaṇa, 743; weapons and weapon-spell of, 482, 493, 507–8, 523, 639, 641–42, 654, 655, 661; explains Śveta’s hunger, 825–26; father of Kuśa (2), 84;—of Pulastya, 729, 780; foretells deeds of Hanumān, 786; as four-faced god, 55, 733, 785–86; gives Ahalyā to Gautama, 774;—his arrow and quivers to Indra, 278;—Maya’s wealth to Hemā, 412;—Puspaka to Kubera, 731;—Rāvaṇi epithet “Indrajit,” 773; gods approach, for refuge, 68, 784–85; gods and, propitiate Vāyu, 785; as granter of boons, 107, 133, 148, 171, 268, 270, 279, 733, 776, 834, 834; grants boon(s) to Bhaṭgiratha, 95;—to Divvīda and Mainda, 525;—to gods, 678–79;—to Hanumān, 426, 508, 786;—to Hemā, 412;—to Indrajit, 583, 773–74;—to
Candra (mountain in ocean of milk), 592
Candrakānta (city): founded in Malla by Rāma, 847
Candaketu (son of Lakṣmāṇa): consecration of, in Candranāśa of, 847
Candravanśa (Lunar Dynasty). See Lunar Dynasty

cannibalism (eating of human flesh), 812–13; of Kumbhakarna, 743; of Lavaṇa, 814; of Rāvaṇa, 29, 754; of ministers of Rāvaṇa, 778. See also eating: of own corpse; flesh; flesh-eating
captivity: of Indra, 772–74; of Rāvaṇa, 779–80. See also Śītā: captivity of carriage(s): 175, 213 219, passim; Daśāratha orders Sumantra to convey Rāma, 171; Lakṣmāṇa takes Śītā to forest in, 794; people of Ayodhyā follow Rāma’s, 177; Rāma orders Lakṣmāṇa to take Śītā to forest in, 794–96; Rāma, Śītā, and Lakṣmāṇa go to forest in, 173–74, 178–80;—abandon carriage, 184. See also chariot(s)
cave (cavern), 147, 210, 237, passim; as dwelling of Rāma and Lakṣmāṇa, 380–81; Hanumān born in, 426; Kabandha directs Rāma and Lakṣmāṇa to, 347; Kiskindhā as, 53, 378–79, 381, 385, 390; of Kumbhakarna, 610; of Maya, 412, 414, 418;—southern search party in, 411–14, 418; of Nṛga (see Nṛga: burrows of), of Rkṣa, 56; of Sāmpāti, 416, 422; Śītā takes recourse in, 291; Svayamprabhā rescues southern search party from, 413; Vālīn battles Mayāvin in, 360–61, 408
cavern. See cave

chapter (adhyāyas): of Mahābhārata, 9
chapter(s) (sarga[s]): of Rāmāyana, 9, 10, 45
caracter synopsis: of animals, 24–25; of Bhārata, 23; of Daśāratha, 23; of Hanumān, 26–27; of Indrajit, 31–32; of Kākekeyī, 24; of Kausalyā, 23–24; of Kumbhakarna, 31; of Lakṣmāṇa, 22; of lesser monkeys, 27; of major characters, 20; of minor rākṣasas, 32; of Rāma, 20–21; of rākṣasas, 27–28; of rākṣasa women, 32–34; of Rāvaṇa, 28–30; of Śatrughna, 23; Śītā, 21–22; of Sugrīva, 25; of Vālīn, 25–26; of Viśvāsena, 30–31
chariot(s): of Atikāyā, 636–38; battle of Rāvaṇa with Rāma, 689–98, 695–98; chariot of, fashioned through power of illusion, 320; of Brahmrā, 733; of Dhūmrākṣa yoked with donkeys, 594; flying, 854–55; of Indra, 267–68, 770, 772; of Indrajit Rāvaṇi, 507, 655, 764, 772;—destroyed by Aṅgada, 581; 772; of Khara, 289; of Rāvaṇa, 302, 320, 693–94, 748, 765, 771–72; Śīva gives to Indrajit, 764; of sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761; steered by owners’ will, 761, 764; of Sumālin, 769; Śūrya as, of Rāhu, 784; of Yama, 758–60. See also flying chariot(s): Puspa/Puspakāvimāna

child(ren): abandonment of, 477, 732; of brahman restored to life, 823; death of, 18, 820–21; killing of, 18;—by Asamaṇija, 170; killing of unborn (see feticide); never predeceases parent, 18; unable to conceive, 88
childbirth. See birth(s)

childhood, of Hanumān, 16, 426, 561, 783–87; of sons of Daśāratha, 10 children, killing of, by Asamaṇija, 170

Christian colonist, 42

Christianity, 37, 39

churning of the ocean. See ocean: churning of Cīnas: northern quarter location of country of, 404

cirajīvin (long–lived one): Hanumān as, 27, 853; Viśvāsena as, 31, 743, 853

Citrakūta, 52, 56, 226, 269, 270, 348, 492, 532, 714, 716, 719; Bharadvāja directs Rāma to, 189–90; Bharata and army encamp on, 234–36; Bharata departs for, 229–31;—meets with Rāma on, 236–55;—reaches, 231; crow incident takes place on, 533; description of, 232–33; Rāma establishes Ashram on, 190–91

Citraratha, advisor and charioteer of Rāma, 166

cō-avatāras, 22. See also avatāra (incarnation)

Cola, 400
comic figure: monkeys as, 24

commander: as wife of army, 425
composite bow. See horn bow
conch (śaṅkha), of Viṣṇu, 403, 735, 737, 738 739, 740

corollation, 339, 369, 375, 394, 415, 438, 497, 616, 636, 660, 744; and bribery, as means of cooperation 394

conciliation, of Sugrīva by Lakṣmāṇa, 393

confrontation: of Rāma with Rāma Jāmatagnya, 11, 56, 126–28

consecration. See ritual consecration; royal consecration

construction of bridge. See bridge to Lākācorpse(s), 269, 286, 341, passim; brahmans churn, of Nimi, 805; condemned to eat own, 278, 824–25; headless, as evil omen, 290, 594; of Ṫaṭāyus, 341; preservation of, of Nimi, 804; in vat of oil, 202, 822; Rāma kicks, of Dundubhi, 53; Śveta condemned
to eat his own, 824–25. See also cannibalism; flesh-eating; preservation: of bodies of Nimi

cosmic cycles (kalpas), 4, 37. See also yuga(s)

cosmic destruction: Rāma threatens, 337–38. See also universal destruction

cosmic eras (yugas), 37–38; Dwāpara, 821; Kali, 821; Kṛta, 729, 753–54, 808, 821, 826, 843; Tretā, 753–54, 821, 824

cow(s): Amāraśīla offers, in exchange for Śunahiṣṭha, 113; Bharaṇa gives, to brahmans, 213;—promises to give, to Hanumān, 719; and brahmans, 78–79, 290, 709; Daśaratha gives, to priests, 68, 356; exalted state of those who give a Sītākshīsa, 200; as gift to brahmans, 68, 800; gomeda, sacrifice of, 764; Janaka gives, to daughters, 125; Kaśyapa gives, to Rāma’s friends, 150; Nrga gives, to brahmans, 800; Rāma has Lakṣmana give, to Śuyajīva, 166;—gives, to the learned, 54;—to brahmans, 124, 726;—to Trijata Gārgya (see Trijata Gārgya), 166; Rohini bears, 280; Śabarā as, of brahman (Nrga story), 800–801;—of Viṣṇiśthā 105–7; Śitā vows to give, to brahmans, 186–87; Surabhi as, pours forth milk for ocean of milk, 761; Viṣṇiśmitra offers, in exchange for Śabarā, 105–6; wish-fulfilling, of Viṣṇiśthā, 105–7. See also Śabarā; Surabhi (Surabhī) creation, 37

cremation: of Jaṭāyus, 53, 342; of Kabandha, 345; of Rāvaṇa, 702; of Vālin, 378–79. See funerary rites

crow(s), 318, 723; Dharma (Yama) grants boon to, 755; foretells abduction of Śitā, 352; Yama (god of death) becomes, 754; second path in sky that of, 419
crow episode, Hanumān recounts, 532–34; Śitā recounts, 492–93, 496

cūḍāmani. See hair ornament

Cūlin: grants son to Somadā, 85–86
curse(s): of abducted women on Rāvaṇa, 16, 29–30, 762–63; of Agastya on Mārica, 78;—on Tātaka, 32–33, 78; of Anarāṇya on Rāvaṇa, 16, 756; of Bharata on those approving of Rāma’s exile, 211–12; of blind sage on Daśaratha, 200–201; of Brahmā on Kumbhakarna, 614; of brahmans on Nrga 801–2; on celestial beings to become rākṣasas, 32; Durvāsas threatens, on Lakṣmana, 40, 849–50; exhaust powers of asceticism, 753; freedom from, through bathing in Ganges, 96; of Gautama on his Ahalyā and Indra, 101, 774; of Matala on Vālin, 408; of Mitra on Urvāsī, 804; as motif of Rāmāyaṇa, 16, 32–33, 40; of Nalakūbara on Rāvaṇa, 16, 767–68; of Nandī/Nandīśvara on Rāvaṇa, 16, 24, 751–52; of Nimi on Viṣṇiśthā, 803; of Pulastya, 729; of sages on Hanumān, 783, 786–87; of Śthūlāsīras on Kabandha, 344; Śūrpaṇkahā as victim of, 33; Trṣa- bindu recognizes Pulastya’s, 730; of Umā on gods and earth, 88–89; of Uśanas Kāvyā on Arajā, 828;—on Daṇḍa, 828;—on Yayāti, 806–7; on Vaiśravaṇa on Tumburu, 266–67; of Vālmiki on Nīśāda hunter, 9, 54; of Viṣṇiśṭha on Mitrasahā Saudāsā, 813;—on Nimi, 803; of Viṣṇiśṭha’s sons on Triśaṇku, 110; Viśravas exempts Vībhāṣana from, 29, 741–42; of Viśravas on his children, 28–29, 741;—on Kaikasi, 28–29, 741;—on Rāvaṇa, 16, 29, 750; of Viṣṇiśmitra on his sons, 114;—on Mahodaya, 111; of—on Rambhā, 116;—on Viṣṇiśṭha’s sons, 111

Cyavana: as Bhārgava, 807–8, 814, 841; asherm of, 814; asks Rāma for protection from Lavana, 808–9; grants Kālīndi boon of son, 252; leads delegation of brahmans, 807; as son of Bhṛgu, 837; tells story of Lavana and Māndhātṛ, 814–15;—of Madhu, 808
cyclical time, 37. See also cosmic cycles; cosmic eras

Dadhimukha (monkey), 564, 642; Aṅgada attacks, 528; conciliates Aṅgada, 530; monkeys assault, 526–28; reports devastation of Madhuvana to Sugrīva, 528–29
dāitya(s), 90, 96, 398, passim; Diti gives birth to, 280, 744; Indra as slayer of, 831; inhabit Raśātāla, 760; Kaiṭabhā and Madhu as, 817; KālaKEYAS a clan of, 763; Maya as lord of, 746; monkeys similar to, 560; Nīvātakavacas as class of, 760; Rāma kills, 322; Rāvaṇa abducts daughters of, 762–63;—inulnerable against, 612, 743;—kills, 761, 763;—takes delight in harming, 574; Śambhu as king of, 753; Sārmiṣṭhā as, 805; Viśṇu kills, 490; worship Viṣṇu, 854
dāna(s), 69, 74, 92, passim; Atikāya
defeats, 636–37; battle between gods and, 591–92, 652, 670, 761, 768; Brahmā grants Rāvaṇa boon of invulnerability to, 742–43; Dundubhi as, 408; fear Rāvaṇa, 509; Hayagrīva as, 403; Kabandha as, 344;—foremost among, 343; live in ocean, 437; live in Pātāla, 423, 554, 577, 697; Maya as, 405, 412, 545; monkeys similar to, 560, 398;—Narakas as, 403; pose no threat to Rāvaṇa, 612; Rāma kills,
dānava(s) (continued)

322, 551; Rāvana abducts daughters of, 762–63;—as enemy of, 609, 629, 649;—inulnerable against, 69, 422, 605, 677, 700, 743;—takes delight in harming, 574; Timidhavā's son as king of, 177; Vālin slayer of, 373; Vidyujīvhā as, 29, 33, 746; wander three worlds, 677–78; will not accept apsarases, 98; worship Viṣṇu, 854
danda (punishment). See punishment
dānḍa (rākṣasa): son of Suśrūṣa, 734
dānḍa (son of Ikṣvāku): Agastya tells story of, 826–28; cursed by Uṣanas Kāvyā, 828; as a dullard, 827; etymology of name of, 827; kingdom of, becomes Daṇḍaka forest, 828; purohitas of (see purohitas):—of Dānḍa; rapes Araṇjī, 827–28; youngest son of Ikṣvāku, 827
dānḍa (weapon): celestial discus, 80; divine weapon, 108

dānḍaka forest, 12, 32–33, 793, 798, passim; ashrams of, 264, 271, 274; Bharata decides to enter, 219; description of, 162; Jana-sthāna in, 828; Kaikeyī asks that Rāma be exiled to, 144, 150; Khara and Dūṣaṇa protect, 763–64; kingdom of Dānḍa becomes, 828; Mārica feeds on flesh of seers in, 305; rākṣasas inhabit, 273; Rāma enters, 12, 52, 56, 264, 304, 413, 434;—exiled to, 144, 150, 152, 168–69; makes safe for sages, 300;—vows to protect seers of, 271, 273;—wants to enter, 249; Rāma's exile to, recalled, 208–9, 245, 434, 510, 519–20; Rāvana abducts Sitā in (see abduction: of Sitā by Rāvana); Rāvaṇa sends Śürpanakha to, 33, 763–64; sages of, 271, 273, 296; Śürpanakha lives in, 287, 764; Virādha lives in, 265–66; Viśvāmitra's ashram in, 305
Danu: cursed by Sthūlaśiras (father of Kabandha), 344; as son of Śṛi, 355. See also Kabandha
danu (wife of Kaśyapa), 280

dardara (mountain): Hanumān swears by, 489; Vinata, troop leader of monkeys, from, 558

dardura (mountain), 227

darimukha, 541, 565; arrival of, in Kiśkin-dā, 397

daśagāvra, "Ten-necked." See Rāvana

daśaratha, 12, 53, 61, passim; accedes to demands of Kaikeyī, 11, 143–45; actions of, raise ethical questions, 12, 23, 143, 187; alliance of, with Romāpāda, 63–64; as role model, 12; attains heaven, 224, 230, 245, 254; becomes blind, 201; blind ascetic curses, 200–201; boon of, to Kaikeyī, 141, 143–44, 150, 160, 248, 316; breaks prenuptial promise, 23, 248; cancels Rāma's consecration, 149–51; character synopsis of, 23; curses Kaikeyī, 170; death of, 11, 201–2;—Rāma learns of, 241; debt of, 135, 233 249, 254; decides to consecrate Rāma, 11, 23, 52, 131–33; descriptions of, 23, 59, 480; designates Rāma as prince regent, 133–35; embalment of, 202; ensnared by Kaikeyī's wiles and her two boons, 143–44; exiles Rāma, 11, 22, 149–51; faints from grief, 168; final audience of, with Rāma, 167–72;—as foil for Rāma, 23; friendship of, with Jatāyus, 13, 279, 281, 417;—with Sampaṭī, 423;—with Vālmīki, 796; funeral libations of wives of, 213; funeral rites of, 212–13, 242; genealogy of, 121–22; gives earth to brahmans, 68; grief of, for Rāma, 52, 144–46, 149, 151, 168, 174, 184, 192, 201, 203, 209, 719; grief of wives of, 192;—over death of, 243–44; hears prophecy of 799; hears tale of Rāyaśrīga, 61;—of son of Saṅgara, 170; heavenly form of, appears, 711–12; inner apartments of, 149, 151, 168; journeys to Mithilā, 119–20; Kaikeyī as cause of death of, 187;—saves twice, 141;—speaks for, 150–51; Kausalyā reviles, 195–96; kills ascetic boy, 198–99; Lakṣmaṇa wants to imprison; 659;—to seize control of government from, 157, 163; Mantharā reviles, 139; marriage of sons of, 11, 125; ministers of, 60, 63, 64, 203–4, 724; model of righteous kingship, 12, 23; orders consecration of Rāma, 134; people cure, 171, 181;—praise, 138; performs birth and naming rites for sons, 71–72; permits Bharata to depart for Rāja-grha, 130; pleads with Bhrāgava Rāma, 126; promise to, cannot be rendered false, 253; purohitas of (see purohitas): of Daṇarathā not named; questions Durvāsas, 799;—Sumantra, 192–93; Rāma criticizes, 187 favorite son of, 130, 510;—questions Bharata about, 238; receives and distributes celestial porridge, 69–70; relationship of Kausalyā with, 23; remembers evil deed, 197; repudiates Bharata and Kaikeyī, 145; returns to Ayodhyā, 125–28; reunited with wives in heaven, 845; reviles Kaikeyī, 144–45, 175; Rāyaśrīga as sacrificial priest of, 10, 63–68; rules kingdom, 10, 59–60; sacrifice (āśva-medha) of, 61, 64–71, 238, 356; sacrifice (rājasūya) of, 238, 356; sacrifice (son-producing [putrakāmeṣṭi]) of, 10, 68–70; sacrificial priests of, 60; sends Rāma with
Viśvāmitra, 73–75, 305; shoots by sound, 197–98; Sitā daughter-in-law of, 797; sons of, born, 71; subordination of royal duty to sexual infatuation by, 12, 23, 143, 187; suffers for lack of a son, 61, 64; Sumantra delivers Rāma's message to, 192–94; unable to speak because of grief, 149–51; under power of Kaikēyi, 143; Vasiṣṭha as sacrificial priest of, 64–68;—as purohita of, 64, 75, 136, 203, 214, 225; visits Rāṣāyāṇa, 63; Viśṇu chooses, as his father, 10, 69; Viśvāmitra requests aid of, 10, 72–75, 305; wants Rāma to be accompanied by army, 169; wives of, adorn Sitā, 724; women of inner apartments of, 60, 70, 173–74, 192–93, 246
daśāvatāra (ten incarnations) of Viṣṇu, 21
daśayabhāva (devotional service to chosen deity) in Vaiṣṇava theology, 26 date of Rāmāyana, 3, 8, 34 daughter(s): Anālā, of Sundarī and Mālayāvān, 734; Anālā, of Viḍhīṣāṇa, 489; as alms, 730; Balā and Atibala as, of Brahhma, 76; death as punishment for man who lusts after, 371; Devavarnīni, of Bharadvāja, 730; Devavati, of Sukeṣa, 733; Devayāni, of Uśanas Kāvyā, 805; Ganges, of Himalaya and Menā, 87; Jayā and Suprabhā, of Prājapati Dakṣa, 75; Kaikasi, of Sūmālīn, 28, 740–41; Kaikēyi, of Aśvapati, 141, Keśinī, of king of Vidarbha, 90; Kumbhīnasi (the elder), of Suṁālīn, 734; Kumbhīnasi (the younger), of Viśvāvasu and Anālā, 808; Māṇḍavi and Śrutakīrti, of Kuśadhvaja, 123, 125, 128; Mandodari, of Maya and Hennā, 746; Mantharā, of Virocanā, 79; Menā, of Meru, 87; jānakī, jānakātmaja translated as, of Janaka, 46; of Kuśanābha, story of, 84–86; Pārvatī (Umā), of Himalaya and Menā, 87; of Prājapati Dakṣa, 280–81, of Ṭṛṇābindu, 729–30; Śacī, of Pulomān, 490; Sālakaṭaṅkāṭā, of Sandhīya, 732; Śaṅtā, of Romapāda, 61, 63; Sāramā, of Śailūṣa, 747; Śārmīṣṭha, of Vṛṣaparvan, 805; Sitā, of goddess of earth, 11, 19; Sitā, of Janaka (see Sitā); Somadā, of Īrmlīla (gandharva woman), 85–86; Sumati, of Arīṣṭanemi, 90; Śūrpanākha, of Kaikasi and Viśravas, 29, 741; Tārā, of Susena, 376; Tāṭakā, of Suketu, 78; unmarried, as source of trouble, suspicior, 741, 746; Īrmlīla, of Janaka, 123; Vāruni, of Varuṇa, 98; Vedavatī, of Kuśadhvaja, 752–53; Vedavatī reborn as, of virtuous man, 21 death: as punishment, 371, 414, 513, 562, 850; by execution, 247; by fasting (see fast to death); not a punishment for emissaries, 512; untimely, as sign of wrongful conduct of king, 820 debt: to ancestors, 127, 248; of Daśaratha, 135, 233 249, 254; to gods and seers, 248 deer. See Mārica: becomes a golden deer description(s): of aśoka grove of Rāvana, 456–58;—of Rāma, 725, 790–91; of auspicious marks of Rāma, 484–85;—of Sitā, 588–89; of autumn, 386; of battleground, 582; of Citrakūṭa, 232–33; of directions, 398–406; of eastern quarter, 398–400; of end of rainy season, 386; of feats of Rāvana, 299; of forces of Rāma, 563–64; declares impossibility of spying on Rāma's forces, 563; of friendship, 358, 359; ideal kingdom of Rāma, 790; of Hanumān, 26–27, 379, 406, 425, 431; of Kailāsa, 405; of Kīśkindhā, 390–91; of Kumbhakarṇa's sleeping chamber, 610, 747; of Lāṅkā, 319, 437–50, 575–76, 734; of Lāṅkā and defenses, 539; of rainy season, 382–83; of Mandākini River (Ganges), 233–34; of northern quarter, 404–6; of ocean, 543; of palace of Rāvana, 443–46; of Pampa 346–47, 349–52; of Pañcavaṭi, 281–82; of Pūspaka, 445–46, 714; of rainy season, 382–83; of rākṣasa wardresses, 462, 469; of rākṣasas, 440–42; of Rāma (see Rāma: description of); of Rāvana (see Rāvana: descriptions of); of Sitā (see Sitā: description of); of social classes in yugas, 821–22; of southern quarter, 400–402; of Sugrīva's abode, 391; of Vālin (see Vālin: description of); of wives and courtesans of Rāvana, 446–52; of western quarter, 402–4 destiny: as all powerful, 850; forces Rāma's exile, 155; previous actions determine, 850. See also fate destruction. See cosmic destruction Devāntaka: fights Aṅgada, 633–34; Hanumān fights and kill, 634; Kumbhakarna paternal uncle of, 628; leads rākṣasas into battle, 629–30; looks like Viṣṇu, 630; Vālin fights, 634 Devarāta, in lineage of Janaka, 122; Śiva gives bow to, 118, 127 Devavarnīni: daughter of Bharadvāja, 730; mother of Kubera Vaishrāvana, 730; wife of Viśravas, 730 Devavatī: daughter of Grāmaṇī, 733; mother of Mālin, Mālayāvān, and Sumālin, 733; wife of Sukeṣa, 733 Devayāni: daughter of Uśanas Kāvyā, 805; mother of Yadu, 805; threatens suicide by poison, 806; wife of Yayāti, 805
Dhānyāmālinī: Atikāya son of, 636; diverts Rāvana from Sītā, 470
Dharanī (earth goddess): takes Sītā back, 843. See also Mādhavi; Vasudhā
Dharma (god of righteousness), 52, 75, 755; as father of Suṣeṇa, 563, 581; grants boon to crow, 755; Rāma as a second, 719; taken for weakness, 553; weapons of, 80, 108
dhārma (righteousness), 4–5, 18, 20, 27, 40; discourse on (see discourse(s): on righteousness); in Rāmāyaṇa, 20; in yuga theory, 37; translation of word, 46. See also rājadharma; righteousness
Dharmabhrīt: tells story of Paṇcāparas, 274
Dharmarāja (god of death), 200. See also Kāla; Kṛśntā; Mrtyu; Vaivasvata; Yama
Dharmārāṇya: Ādhihītarajaya founds, 84
dhārmāṇastra: Rāmāyaṇa as, 5
Dhāṛ (the creator), 158, 278; Diti bears, 230
Dhṛṣṭi (minister of Daṇḍaka), 60
Dhūmaketu (minister of Rāma), 769
Dhūmaketu (planet), 394
Dhūmaketu (leader of apes): arrival of, in Dhūmaketu (planet), 464
Dhūmra (mountain), 394
Dhūmra (leader of apes): arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397, 559, 622
Dhūmra (mountain), 394
Dhūmrākṣa: battles monkeys, 594–96; Hanumān fights and kills, 596; Māṇicara/Māṇicbara strikes down in battle, 750; one of Rāvana's six ministers, 749, 776–77, 778; son of Sumālīn and Ketumati, 734
digging of ocean. See ocean
Dilipa, 122, 200, 218, 252; father of Bhagiratha, 94; son of Amśumant, 94; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 94, 96
disciple(s): Bharadvāja as, of Vālmiki, 54–55; Kuśa and Lava as, of Vālmiki, 6, 10, 17–18, 57, 839–41 (see also Kuśa; Lava); of Bharadvāja, 225–26; of sages, 728; of Śiva, 77; of Uśanas Kāvyā, 828; of Vasiṣṭha, 104, 107; of Viśvāmitra, 111;—are images of Rāma, 840;—Rāma recognizes as sons, 842
discus (caṇḍra): of Dhrāma, 108; of Kāla, 108; of Viśu, 80, 108, 290, 299, 403, 449, 644, 645, 709, 735, 736, 737, 739, 740, 768
Dītī: austerities of 98–99; gives birth to daityas, 280, 744;—to Māruts, 99; Indra serves, 98;—smashes fetus of, 99; sons of, 97–98; wife of Kaśyapa, 98, 280, 744
divine weapon-spell(s). See weapon-spells
divinity/divinities: Hanumān as, 27; of Hinduism, 4. See also god; gods
dove: exemplary story of, 551–52
dream(s): as prophecy, 475; beliefs about, 205, 311, 347, 481, 483; of Bharata, 204–5; of Daśaratha, 135; of Lakṣmana, 670; of Mārica, 307; about monkeys inauspicious, 481, 483; of the rākṣasas, 571; of Sītā, 483; of Trijātā, 33–34, 56, 475–76
drinking ground/hall of Rāvana 56, 450–53
Droṇa (mountain in ocean of milk), 592
Dundubhi: as asura, 363; boon of, 362; as buffalo demon, 362; challenges ocean to fight, 362;—Himalaya to fight, 362;—Vālī to fight, 362–63; as dānava, 408; description of, 362; fights Vālī, 363; Māyāvin as son of, 360–61; Rāma kicks skeleton of, 53, 363; son of Maya, 746; Vālī kills, 363, 408
Durdhara (field marshal of Rāvana): Hanumān, fights and kills, 503
Durvāsas, 837, 841; ashram of, 850; curse of, 40; Daśaratha questions, 799; demands freshly cooked meal, 850; fasting of, 850; foretells future to Daśaratha, 799; Lakṣmana announces arrival of, 850; son of Atri, 798; threatens curse, 849–50; in Vasiṣṭha's ashram, 788–89; visits Rāma, 849–50
Dūṣαṇa (general of Khara's army), 32, brother of Khara, 284, Khara addresses, 289; made chief of Khara's army, 763; protects Daṇḍaka forest, 763–64; rallies rākṣasas, 293; Rāma fights and kills, 52, 293; Rāma fights and kills recalled, 300–301, 303, 327, 461, 480, 564, 585, 652, 677, 697, 716; Rāvana sends, to Daṇḍaka forest with Khara, 763–64; Śūpanākha tells Rāma about, 284
dust storm as curse, 828
Dutt, Madhusudana, 32
Dvāpara Yuga, 38, 821
Dvīdha, 380, 390, 440, passim; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; boon of, from Brahmā, 843–46.
525; cut down in battle, 565; declares prowess in leaping, 424; drinks nectar of immortality, 525, 560; fights and kills Aśaniprabha, 581–82; gods create, 787; in southern search party, 400, 411; invulnerability of, 525; number of troops of, 397; participates in Sugrīva’s consecration, 380; Rāma gives gifts to, 726; son of the Aśvins, 397, 525, 564; takes picket duty, 543. See also Mainda
dwarf: rākṣasa woman as, 462
dwarf incarnation of Viṣṇu (vāmanāvatāra): story of, 81–82

earth: entering of, by Sītā, 19, 843
earth goddess. See Dharaṇī; Mādhavī; Vasudhā
eastern quarter: description of, 398–400; dispatching of search party to, 398–400, 407
eastern search party: dispatching of, to northern quarter, 398–400, 407; failure of, to find Sītā, 408–9; Vinata as leader of, 398, 407
eating: of dogs’ flesh forbidden, 114; of five-clawed creatures, 370; of lizard by brahmans and kṣatriyas, 370; of meat, 187, 227–29, 451, 611, 788, 812, 791; of own corpse, 278, 824–25. See also flesh; flesh-eating; flesh of humans
Ekākṣipiṅgala (epithet of Kubera Vaiśravana): etymology of name of, 748
elephants who support the earth: sons ofcontain, 55–67, 838–39
elexir of immortality. See nectar of immortality
embalming. See corpses, preservation of; preservation, of bodies
emendations: based on manuscript evidence, 6n
emic history of Rāmāyaṇa, 34, 37–40
epics: historicity of, 37; of Aryan society, 40
etic history of Rāmāyaṇa, 34
exemplary story/stories, Budha tells, to Ila, 836; of dove offering own flesh, 551–52; Lakṣmaṇa tells, of Indra, 830–33; Rāma tells, of Ila, 833–37. See also cautionary tales
exile: of Asamañja, 97; of Lakṣmaṇa (see Lakṣmaṇa: Rāma banishes); of Rāma (see Rāma: Daśaratha exiles); of Sugrīva (see Sugrīva: Vālin exiles)
falcons: fourth path in sky that of, 419
fasting: of Agastya, 277; of ascetics, 264, 302, 348; of Bharata, 722; Bharata threatens, against Rāma, 253; of Durvāsas, 850; of Kausalyā, 230; of Mārica, 303; as a means of death, 414, 454; of Rāma, 223, 251, 306; of Śiśu, 459, 465, 483, 518, 521, 544, 655, 796; of Svayamprabhā, 412; of wives of Daśaratha, 223
fast to death: Aśgada urges monkeys to, 414; decision of Aśgada to, 416, 417; decision of southern search party to, 14, 414, 416–18, 454, 486; of Tārā, 375, 377; of wives of Vālin, 375
fate: passim; as Kāla, 343; contrasted with human action, 110, 659, 156; Rāma reflects upon, 852; Rāma relies on, as well as human effort, 488; Rāvaṇa under the power of, 329, 489, 693, 756; Sītā blames, for her suffering, 469, 704, 802; Sītā’s abduction ordained by, 469; for what cannot be explained, 155; wife must follow her husband’s, 161. See also destiny
feeding: of Bharata and his army by Bharadvāja, 226–29; brahmans and guests at aśvamedhā, 55–67, 838–39
feticide, 209–10, 263; Indra attempts, 99; poison as a means of, 252; by surgeon, 477
fire, passim; as witness, 346 356, 359, 523. See also Agni, as witness
fire ordeal. See ordeal by fire
five-clawed creatures, eating of, 370
five-headed serpents, 388, 431, 449, 509, 511, 684–85
flesh: Agastya eats, of Vātāpi (rākṣasā), 275–76; battleground thick with, 580, 715; birds and beasts that eat, as inauspicious omens, 290, 600; body of Dundubhi heavier with, 363, carnivorous beasts gorge on, 679; carrion birds gorge on, 286, 599–600, 652; crow as hungry for, 492; demons as eaters of, 613; dove offers own, 551; eating of dogs’ forbidden, 114;
flesh (continued)
Garuḍa eats, of tortoise and elephant, 303; Kumbhakarna craves, 626; Kumbha-
karna drenches earth with, 624; lions as eaters of, 196; malignant spirits crave, of
gandharvas’ sons, 845; marks Narāntaka’s path, 632; Muṣṭikas as eaters of dogs’,
111; of black deer fit for sacrifice, 191; of gazelles, 342; of goats given to brah-
mans, 212–13; of monkeys forbidden to brahmans and kshatriyas, 370; of Śa-ābhāṅga consumed by sacrificial fire, 268; of stag eaten by tiger, 373; offering of,
for eating, 812–13; Śveta ears own, 825; Triśiras as eater of raw, 303; vultures become eaters of, 419
flesh-eating: by beasts, 196, 290, 330, 758, 846; by rākṣasas, 83, 196, 290, 332, 334,
441, 474, 521, 587, 613, 732, 780; by spirits, 846. See also cannibalism; eating:
of meat
flesh of humans: ascetics who mistreat guests destined to eat own, 278; ferocious creatures eat, 158–59; eating of, 812–13; illusory cook offers, to Saudāsa, 812; Mārīca eats (of seers), 305–6; rākṣasas
as eaters of, 28, 83, 87, 273, 276, 288, 327, 332, 334, 346, 587, 603, 612, 732,
780; rākṣasa women as eaters of, 330, 462, 472, 475, 521; Saudasa cursed eat,
813; Śveta cursed to eat his own, 825; Vasisṭha offered, 813; Vātāpi and Ilvala
rush Kum, 705
flying chariot(s): of Brahmat, 733; of Daśar-
tha; 711–12; of the gods, 609, 702, 708,
713, 845, passim; of Indra, 267;—Rāma
uses, 689–90; returns to heaven, 702;
of Indrajit, 32, 764 (see also Indrajit); of
Rāvana, 302, 309, 320, 701;—Jātayus
destroys, 322–23. See also chariots;
Puṣpaka(vimāna)
framing narrative: of Rāmāyana, 9
fraternal conflict: as theme of Mahābhārata,
26;—of Rāmāyana, 24–28. See also sibling rivalry
full-moon day, 107, 149, 682, 788; of Āśādha,
383
full-moon night, 138, 176, 485
full-moon rites, 106
funerary libations, 56, 93, 94, 95, 97; for Jātayus by Rāma 342;—by Sampāti,
420; for Vālin by Sugrīva, 360. See also
water-offerings
funerary rites, 202, 208, 209, 222, 241, 812,
820, for Daśaratha, 212–13; for Rāvana,
28, 30, 34, 702, for Vālin, 378–79
Gāḍhi (king), 755; son of Kuṣanābha, 86,
104; Viśvāmitra son of, 72, 104, 105, 108
Gaja (monkey troop leader), 390, 411, 541,
passim; fights and kills Tapaṇa, 581; leader
of one hundred million monkeys, 560;
marches before the army, 540; member of southern search party, 400; participates
in Sugrīva’s consecration, 380; prowess in jumping of, 424; one of the five sons of
Vaivasvata, 564
gajapupśi garland: as distinguishing feature,
364; Lākṣmaṇa gives to Sugrīva, 364–65
Gandhamādana, 574, 580, 587, 641, 643,
788, passim; exhaustion of, 410, 411 413;
arival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397; declares prowess in jumping, 424; launches attack
on Indrajit’s horses, 669; marches on left flank of army, 540; member of southern
search party, 400; number of monkey troops of, 397; one of the five tigers among
monkeys, 623;—sons of Vaivasvata, 564;
participates in Sugrīva’s consecration, 380
Gandhamādana (monkey troop leader), 380;
advices southern search party, 410, 424 ;
declares prowess in jumping, 424; leads
left flank of army, 540; member of southern
search party, 400, 411; number of troops of, 397; one of five sons of Vaivas-
vata, 564;—“tigers among monkeys,”
who rush Kumbhakarna, 623
Gandhamādana (mountain), 189, 458
Gāndhāra (name of a region), 847
gandharva(s) (class of semi-divine beings),
52, 57, 68, passim; armies of, battle
Bharata’s army, 846–47; Babhru as, 402;
Bharadvāja invokes, to entertain Bharata,
227–28; Bhikṣu as, 402; of gods, 227;
Gopa as, 228; Grāmaṇi as, 402; Hāha as,
227; Huhu as, 227; king(s) of, 228;—Rāma
as image of, 133, 170;—and Lākṣmaṇa
as images of, 286; lords of, 228, 402; Nārada
as, 228; Parvata as, 228; Rohitas as class
of, 402; Śailūṣa as, 402, 747; Śubhra as,
402; Śuryavarcas as, 228; Tumburu as,
228; Viśvāvasu as, 435; weapon-spell of,
705
gandharva woman/women (class of
semi-divine beings): Alambusā as, 228;
gods father sons on, 70; Miśrakeśi as,
228; Narmadā as, 734; Puṇḍarikā as,
Gandhi: on Ramaśāya, 42
Ganges (name and personification of river) (Jāhnavi, Bhāgirathī, Mandākinī, Tripathaga), 182, 184, 745, 755, 766, 776, 778; as Bhāgirathī, 96, 186, 188, 222, 298, 795; Bharata encamps at, with army, 220–24;—ferries across, 224–25; birthplace of Agni, 732; daughter of Himalaya, 87–88; descent of, to earth, 94–97; as Jāhnavi, 14, 77, 84, 87, 184, 217, 259, 79–97, 811; as Mandākinī, 745, 766; Rāma fords (Mandākinī), 186–87;—has Laṅkāma abandon Sītā on banks of, 794–97; role of in Skanda’s birth, 89–90; Śiva checks fall of (Mandākinī), 95;—releases, into Lake Bindu, 95; Sītā makes vow to, 186–87;—wishes to visit (Mandākinī), 791; as Tripathaga, 88 Gārgya (son of Aṅgīras): guru and messenger of Yudhāji, 845–46 Gārgya Trijata. See Trijāta Gārgya garland(s). See floral garland; gajapuspī garland; gold garland; gold necklace garuḍa (name of a military formation), 563 Garuda (Vainateya, Suparna), 159, 266, 307, 329, 368, 593, 736, 778, passim; advises Aṃśumānt, 93–94; ascetics rescued by, 302–3; as avis ex machina, 24; drives off rāksasas, 737, 740;—serpent weapons of Indrajit, 592–93; as enemy of snakes, 23, 24, 175, 373, 427, 430, 468, 499, 506, 592–93, 609, 624, 629, 633, 644, 779, 781; fights Mālin, 738–39; forced to retreat by Mālin, 738–39; as Garumant second life breath of Rāma, 592; genealogy of, 280–81; Hanumān as celebrated as, 425; heads toward Meru, 644; heals serpent wounds of Rāma and Laṅkāma, 592; one of three who can cross ocean, 495, 535, 537; power of, 427, 782;—of, to cross ocean, 495, 535;—of vision of, 419; Rāma’s arrow fletched with feathers of, 698; ravages Niśāda realm, 303; sister of Sumati, 91, son of Vinatā, 280; steals nectar, 302–3; uncle of Aṃśumānt, 93; as Vainateya drives off Mālayāvān, 740; Viśvakarman constructs residence of, 399; weapon spell of, 690; weapon spell of, 690 Gautama: and Ahalyā, 100–102; asceticism of, 774; ashram of, 100, 774, 802; Brahmā gives Ahalyā to, 774; cures Indra, 774; curses Ahalyā, 101, 774;—Indra to lose testicles, 101; husband of Ahalyā, 774; one of the seven seers, 728; performs sacrifice for Nimi, 802 Gavākṣa (langur), 390, 400, 573, passim; arrival of, in Kiśkindhā, 397; declares prowess in jumping, 424; fights Kumbhakarna, 623; and Gavayā march in lead, 540; joins fight against Mahāpārśva, 682; king of langurs, 397; leads seven million monkeys, 558; langur, 560, 580, member of southern search party, 400; one of five sons of Vaivasvata, 564;—“tigers among monkeys,” who rush Kumbhakarna, 623; participates in Sugriva’s consecration, 380; troop leader of the langurs, 559 Gavaya (monkey), 390, 540, 74, passim; and Gavākṣa, march in lead, 540; brings golden vessel of camphor and sandalwood paste, 725; declares prowess in jumping, 424; leads seven million monkeys, 558; member of southern search party, 400, 411; participates in Sugriva’s consecration, 380; son of Vaivasvata, 564; surrounded by one hundred million monkeys, 560 gender transformation: of animals 833; of Ilā and his attendants, 833–34; of Sīva, 833 genealogy: of creatures as narrated by Jaṭāyu, 280–81; of Garuḍa, 280–81; of Ikṣvāku, 121–122, 303–4; of Janaka, 122–23; of rāksasas, 16, 729–35; of Rāvaṇa and his siblings, 16, 740–42; of solar dynasty, 251–52; of Viśvāmitra, 103. See also lineage Gṛhtācī, (apusaras): attachment of Viśvāmitra to, 392; mother of hundred daughters of Kuśāñbha, 84 Girivraja (city): founded by Vasu, 84, 204. See also Rājaṅgṛha Go (unidentified): fights Rāvana, 761; goes forth with Puṣkara, 761 god: of craft (see Viśvakarman); of death (see Dharmarāja; Kāla; Mrtyu; Vaivasvata); of fire (see Agni); of love (see Kāma); of marriage (see Bhaga); of ocean (see Sāgara; Varuṇa); of rain (see Parjanya); of righteousness (see Dhrama); of sun (see Śūrya); of waters (see Varuṇa); of wealth (see Kubera Vaīśravana); of wind (see Vāyu) Godāvari (river), 279, 281–84, 342, passim; fears Rāvana, 315; Rāma questions, 336; Sītā implores, for aid, 321;—threatens to drown herself in, 314 goddesses. See individual names gods: Aditi gives birth to, 744; age of, 267; ask Viṣṇu to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735; assembly of, witness Sītā’s oath, 842; Brahmā calms fears of, 816–17; Brhaspati as purohita of, 339; drive off rāksasas army, 771; fight rāksasas, 769–73; grant boons
gods (continued)
to Laksmana, 817;—to animals, 754;
— to Hanumān, 785–86; honor Hanumān, 436; Indrajit breaks army of, 770; Mālin battles, 738–49; perform aśvamedha for
Indra, 832; plead with Viṣṇu to incarnate, 10, 68–69; remind Brahmā of Kumbhakarṇa’s crimes, 743; seek aid of Agastya, 276;
and seers, take refuge with Śiva, 735; shrines to, at Agastya’s ashram, 278; as sons of Aditi, 97–98, 280, 744; stop Brahmā from
granting boon to Kumbhakarṇa, 743; Sumālin battles, 739–40; supplicate Brahmā for relief, 784–85; take on forms
of animals, 754; take refuge with Śiva (Maheśvara), 735; test Hanumān, 434–35; visit ashram of Agastya, 823; worship
Laksmana as fourth part of Viṣṇu, 851. See also individual names
golden deer. See Mārica: becomes a golden
deer
golden image: of Sitā, 18, 838
golden tree. See omens
gold garland: of Indra (Vāsava), 784;
of Vālin, 376–77, 781 (see also gold
necklace)
gold necklace: Indra has Vāyu give Rāma,
725; of Sugriva, 561; Vālin receives, from
Indra (Śakra), 263, 368–69. See also gold
garland
Gomati (river), 181, 206, 557, 718, 722, 795,
799, 838
gomedha (cow sacrifice), 764
Gomukha (son of Mātali), 770
gosava (name of sacrifice), 845
gośīrṣa sandalwood, 390
Govinda. See Viṣṇu
Grāmaṇi (gandharva lord), 402; Devavatī
doughter of, 733
grammar: Hanumān learns, 787
grief: of abducted women, 762–63; of Aṅgada
(see Aṅgada: grief of); of Ayodhyā (see
Ayodhyā: grief of); of Bharata (see Bha-
rata: grief of); of brahman father of dead
child, 820; of Daśaratha (see Daśaratha:
grief of, for Rāma); of Daśaratha’s wives
(see Daśaratha: grief of wives of); destroys
everything, 197; of Devayāni, 806; of the
forest, 194–97; of Hanumān (see Hanu-
mān: grief of); of Ila (see Ila: grief of):
impossible to withstand unexpected, 197;
as inspiration for the Rāmdyana, 54–55;
of Janaka (see Janaka: grief of), 202;
of Kausalyā (see Kaussalya: grief of); of
Laksmana (see Laksmana: grief of); of
Madhu, 808; of Mālin’s brothers, 739;
of Mandodari, 700–701; as metaphor of,
as ocean, 214, 288; of monkey women
(see monkey women: grief of); of monkeys
(see monkeys: grief of); of mothers of slain
rākṣasas, 501; of no use to the dead, 378;
of parents of slain ascetic, 199–201; of
the people of Ayodhyā, 11, 168, 170–72,
174–75, 180, 259, 315, 326–30, 332,
515, 815; of Rāma (see Rāma: grief of);
of Rāvana (see Rāvana: grief of); of
Sampāṭi (see Sampāṭi: grief of); of
Śatrughna (see Śatrughna: grief of); of
Sugriva (see Sugriva: grief of); as a sea,
214; of Sitā (see Sitā: grief of); of Suman-
tra (see Sumantra: grief of); of Surabhi,
210–11; of Śūrpanākha (see Śūrpanākha:
grief of); of Tārā (see Tārā: grief of); of
rākṣasas women (see rākṣasas women: grief
of); of sight of Rāma will allay, 219; of
the women of Ayodhyā, 174, 180, 201–2;
of women abducted by Rāvana, 762–64; of
wounded ascetic, 198; vitiates efforts, 538
guardian elephants (diggajas). See Aṅjana;
Mahāpadma; Padma; Vāmana
guest-offering(s) (arghya[s]), 55, 62, 72, 77,
102, 182, 126, 189, 225, 226, 278, 717,
757, 780, 797, 812, 818, 848
Guha (1), 41, 191, 194, 238, 605, 717–18;
extends hospitality to Bharata, 220–25,
236;—to Rāma, 182–86; extols virtues
of Laksmana to Bharata, 221–22; ferries
Bharata and army across Ganges River,
224–25; Rāma dismisses, 186
Guha (2). See Skanda
guhyakas, 291, 628, 638, 785; with Kubera
on Mt. Kailāsa, 405
Haha (gandharva lord), 227
Haihayas, 252, 775, 778, 780; Arjuna
Kārtavirya king of, 775, 778–79, 780
hair. See Sitā: braid of
hair ornament: of Sitā, 56, 494, 497, 532, 534
hamsa(s), 87, 95, 159, passim; Puspakā yoked
to, 825; sixth path in sky that of, 419;
Varuṇa grants boon to, 755; yearning of,
to live on Lake Mānas, 382
hanging: as a means of suicide, 454; Sitā
threatens, 314, 478
Hanumān: ability of, to leap the ocean, 426,
437; adoptive son of Kesarin, 397, 428;
advise Sugriva, 384–85, 389–90; Agastya
praises, 787; Aṅjanā mother of, 426;
announces Rāma and Laksmana to
Śugriva, 356; arrives in Lānkā, 436–39;
asks permission to kill Sitā’s wardresses,
704; attacks and burns Lānkā, 14, 27,
514–15, 540, 544, 782–83; attacks and
is driven back by Indrajit, 656; attempts

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
to devour Airavata, 784; battles rākṣasas, 499–506, 513–14;—recalled, 782–83; bears Śītā’s message to Rāma, 704–5; Bharata gives gifts to, 719; birth of, 425–26, 487, 783; boons of, 426, 508, 785–86; Brahmā revives, 785; brahmans curse, 786; breaks free of bonds, 514; brings healing herbs for Lakṣmana, 645, 688;—water for Rāma’s consecration, 725; broods, 438–42, 445, 452–55, 460, 515, 688; carries Lakṣmana from battlefield, 608; challenges Indrajit to combat, 663; character synopsis of, 26–27; childhood of, 16, 426, 560–61, 783–87; consoles Śītā, 14, 487–90, 495–96, 516; commits offenses against the seers, 786; confidence of, 427–28; confidence of Rāma in, 407;—of Sugriva in, 406–7; considers pros and cons of accosting Śītā, 478–80; consoles Tārā, 375; contemplates killing Rāvana, 455;—suicide, 455; counselor of Sugrīva, 13, 27, 356, 390; crushes Mount Aroviṣtha, 516–17;—Mount Mahendra, 428–30, 517;—mountains in leaping, 644; decides on language to address Śītā, 479;—to assault rākṣasas, 498; describes Laṅkā and defenses, 539;—Rāma to Śītā, 483–85; descriptions of, 26–27, 379, 406, 425, 431; destroys armies of Rāvana’s field marshals, 503; devastates Laṅkā, 14, 540, 544; as devotee of one’s lord, 5;—of Rāma. 27, 31;—of Rāma and Śītā, 26, 789; did not know his own strength, 783; divinity of, 27; does not follow Rāma to heaven, 27, 853; dragged before Rāvana, 508; elation of, 440, 450, 460, 463, 526; eloquence of, 353–56, 479, 550; encounters Indrajit, 506–9;—Mount Maināka, 432–34, 716;—Surasā, 434–35; encounters and kills Simhikā, 436; enters the aśoka grove, 456; epithets of, 45;—essential actor in Śītā’s rescue, 494; etymology of name of, 426, 561, 784–85; exhortations, 415;—monkeys, 625, 657; fears consequences of his failure, 454;—he has killed Śītā, 515; feats of, 27, 782–83, passim;—Rāma recounts, 783–84; fetches mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688; fights and is stunned by Kumbhakarna, 623–24;—by Rāvana, 605–6; fights and kills Akampana (1), 597–98;—Aśka, 504–5;—Bhāsakarna, 503;—Devāntaka, 634;—Dhūmrākṣa, 594–96;—Durdhara, 503;—Jambubālīn (1), 500–501;—Jambubālīn (2), 581;—Nikumbha, 650–51;—Praghasta, 503;—rākṣasas, 499–506;—seven sons of minister, 501–2;—Trisūras, 634–35;—Virūpākṣa, 503;—Yűpākṣa, 503; fights and stuns Rāvana, 608; finds and consoles Śītā, 14, 459–97; fire does not burn, 514; flatters Śītā, 481; flees Kumbhakarna, 622; friendship of, with Sugrīva, 787; gives signet ring of Rāma to Śītā, 14, 27, 487, 522;—Śītā’s hair ornament to Rāma, 532; gods grant boons to, 785–86;—honor, 436; greatest leaper, 426–27; grief of, 453, 455, 656–57; history of, recounted by Agastya, 18, 783–87; Indra grants boons to, 785–86; Indrajit fights and captures with divine weapons, 14, 32, 56, 507–8;—pierces with arrows, 666; informs Sugrīva of safety on Mount Rṣyamūkha, 408; introduces Rāma and Lakṣmana to Sugrīva, 356; Jāmbavān instructs, to bring healing herbs, 27, 643–44, 688;—praises, 426–27;—questions, 519;—sees, as only hope for survival, 643; jaw of, broken, 426, 784; kills a hundred palace guards, 500;—kimkaras, 499–500;—Simhikā, 436; kindles fire to solemnize pact, 356; Kubera grants boons to, 786; as langur (Sennopithecus entellus) 47; leader of Sugrīva’s companions, 359; leads monkeys into cavern of Svyamprabhā, 411–12;—leaping of, 14, 53, 56, 429–37, 516–18, 547, 561, 706;—to mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688;—to sun, 426–27; learns grammar, 787; length of life of, 789, 853; life span of, as “long-lived one (cirajivin),” 25, 27, 853; Maināka provides resting place for, 432; mauls Rāhu, 784–85; meets Rāma and Lakṣmana, 13, 53, 56, 354–56;—Śītā, 480–97, 516–17; member of southern search party, 13, 400, 410;—messenger of Rāma, 482–83, 486, 510–11;—of Sugrīva, 510;—mind of, undisturbed by sight of Rāvana’s women, 452;—mistakes Airavata for fruit, 784;—Mandodari for Śītā, 450;—the sun for fruit, 783; monkey nature of, 450, 515; monkeys delighted at success of mission of, 518; mourns fallen Rāma and Lakṣmana, 585; never lies, 355; observes rākṣasas women, 462;—Rāvana, 14, 448–49, 463–64;—Rāvana’s women in the drinking hall, 446–48;—the rākṣasas, 440–52;—Śītā, 462–65; offers to carry Śītā back to Rāma, 14, 490–92; paraded through Laṅkā with tail on fire, 513; participates in consecration of Sugrīva, 380; plans to console Śītā, 479;—kill rākṣasas champions, 498; power of, to leap ocean unique, 14; Prahasta interrogates, 509–10; praises Rāma to Śītā,
Hanumān (continued)
483–85; prepares to leap ocean, 427–28; questions Svayamprabhā, 412; rākṣasas bind, 508–10;—set tail of, on fire, 513–14; Rāma asks Agastyā history of, 782–83;—dispatches, to tell Sītu of victory, 34, 703;—dispatches, to Ayodhyā as messenger to Bharata, 717–19;—gives gifts to, 788–89;—gives, pearl necklace, 789;—gives, signet ring as token of recognition, 14, 407;—orders Sugrīva and, to care for Lakṣmaṇa, 687;—orders Vibhiṣaṇa and, to remain on earth, 853;—praises, 537, 782–83;—questions, about Śītā, 533;—tells Vibhiṣaṇa and, to remain alive, 853; ravages aśoka grove and domed palace, 498, 500; Rāvana falsely reports, as slain, 565; Rāvana orders execution of, 511;—kimkaras to capture, 499;—tail of, set on fire, 513;—sentences to death, 512;—reassured by auspicious omens, 515–16;—rebukes Sugrīva for negligence, 389–90; recounts adventures in Laṅkā to monkeys, 519–24;—to Rāma, 531–32; reflects on propriety of observing Rāvana’s women, 452;—Śītā’s history and appearance, 460–61; relationship of, to Śāgara, 433;—to Vāyu, 432; released from Brahma’s weapon, 508; remains alive as long as Rāmāyaṇa remains current, 853; replaces mountain of healing herbs, 645; reports adventures of Rāma to Bharata, 719–21;—adventures to Rāma and Sugrīva, 14–15, 531–32;—apparent murder of Śītā to Rāma, 658;—on Laṅkā’s defenses, 539–40;—Rāma’s return to Bharata, 719;—Rāma’s return to Guha, 717–18;—Rāma’s victory to Śītā, 703;—to monkeys on his mission, 518–24;—to Śītā on his meeting with Śītā, 531–36; requests release from cave (cavern) of Maya, 413; resolves to leap the ocean, 429; retells adventures of Rāma and the monkeys, 485–86;—exile of Rāma to Rāvaṇa, 510–11;—Śītā of Rāma’s exile, 480, 485–86; reviles Indrajit, 656; Śāgara seeks rest for, on Mount Maināka, 432; sanctions monkeys’ assault on Madhuvana, 14, 527; searches aśoka grove, 455–59;—for healing herbs, 27, 645, 688;—for Śītā in Laṅkā, 14, 439–59, for Śītā in Laṅkā, recalled, 531–32, 782;—Rāvaṇa’s inner apartments, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32;—Rāvaṇa’s palace, 442–45; seeks refuge with Svayamprabhā, 413;—seers curse, 786; serves as Rāma’s mount, 540, 608; sets fire to Laṅkā, 14, 27, 514–15; shaken by power of Rāvaṇa, 464; Simhiṅka seize shadow of, 436; Śītā begs, to stay in Laṅkā, 495;—denies knowing, 498–99;—exhorts, 494–95;—fears, 481–83;—gives gifts to 726;—gives, hair ornament, 494, 497;—gives, hair ornament, recounted, 532;—gives, her message to Rāma, 496–97;—gives, pearl necklace, 726;—prays to Agni for fire not to burn, 513–14;—questions, about Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 487–89;—refuses offer of, to rescue, 14, 490–92;—tells, of Rāma’s banishment and her abduction, 481–82;—tells, the crow episode, 492–93;—thinks, is Rāvaṇa, 482; Śiva grants boons to, 786; size of, changeable, 412, 427, 429–30, 435–36, 438–39, 455–56, 490, 497–98, 514, 517, 534; son of the wind god, 27, 355–56, 427, passim;—sows dissension among monkeys, 415;—spokes in favor of accepting Vibhiṣaṇa, 551;—Sanskrit, 479; speed of, 430–31, 435, 644; stationed at Laṅkā’s western gate, 574; submits to the power of Brahmā’s weapon, 508; Sugrīva instructs, to find Śītā, 406;—orders, to summon monkeys, 394;—praises, 529;—sends, to meet Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 353–54; Suraśā asked to create an obstacle for, 434; surveys Laṅkā, 437–42, 513; Śūrya does not burn, 432, 783;—grants boons to, 786; Ṣuṣeṇa instructs, to bring healing herbs, 27, 688; takes form of a mendicant, 354; takes on human form, 718; Tārā rejects advice of, 375; tears off peak of mountain of healing herbs, 645, 688; tells Rāma Śītā’s message, 532; tells Rāvaṇa to return Śītā, 511–12;—Svayamprabhā of search party’s adventures, 413; terrorizes Śītā’s rākṣasa wards, 498–99;—tries to devour Airāvata, 784;—the sun, 426–27, 783; unable to find healing herbs, 645, 688; unburnt through Śītā’s truth-act, 513–14; urges monkeys to drink honey-wine, 527; Varuṇa grants boons to, 786; Vāyu as divine father of, 426, 783; Vibhiṣaṇa and, searches for survivors, 642–43; Vibhiṣaṇa dissuades Rāvaṇa from executing, 512–13; Viśvakarman grants boons to, 786; warns Rāvaṇa of his destruction, 511–12; witnesses murder of illusory Śītā, 655–56; wreaks destruction among the rākṣasas, 663, 668; Yama grants boons to, 786
Hara. See Śiva
Hara (monkey troop leader), 558, 574
Hara (rākṣasa son of Mālīn), 734
harem. See inner apartments

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
Hari. See Viṣṇu (Hari)
hrīṣyāma sandalwood, 402
Hārītas (tribal clan): produced from
wish-fulfilling cow, 107
Harivamśa, 21
Hastinapura, 35–36, 204
Hayagrīva (dānava): Viṣṇu kills, 403
healing herbs, 27, 430; Brāhaspati restores
dānava with, 591–92; Hanumān fetches,
644–45, 688; mountain of, 643, 445; on
Mount Candra, 592; on Mount Droṇa, 592;
mṛtasanjīvāni, “restorer of life,” 592, 643;
samdhāni, “joiner of limbs,” 643;
samjīvakarāni, “restorer of life,” 592, 643;
sauvarṇakarāni, “restorer of the golden
glow,” 643; Susena recounts story of,
591–92; viśālyā (karāni), “healer of arrow
wounds,” 159, 592, 643
hedgehog: eating of, 370
Hemā (apsaras): Brahmā grants boon to,
412; friendship of, with Svyamprabhā,
412; mother of Mandodari, 746; relation-
ship of, with Maya, 412; wife of Maya,
746
herb(s): for healing, 27, 430;—Brāhaspati
restores dānava with, 591–92;—Hanumān
fetches, 644–45, 688;—mountain of, 643,
645;—on Mount Candra, 592;—on Mount
Droṇa, 592;—mṛtasanjīvāni, “restorer of
life” as, 592, 643;—samdhāni, “joiner of
limbs” as, 643;—samjīvakarāni, “restorer of
life” as, 592, 643;—sauvarṇakarāni,
“restorer of the golden glow” as, 643;
Susena recounts story of, 591–92;
viśālyā (karāni), “healer of arrow
wounds” as, 159, 592, 643; for protection, 630
Heti: founds lineage of rākṣasas, 732;
marries Bhāyā (sister of Kāla), 732
Himāgarī (mountain): simha birds live on
slope of, 402
Himalaya (mountain personified): Dundubhi
challenges to fight, 362; father-in-law of
Śiva (Śaṅkara), 362; gives Ganges to gods,
87; in northern quarter, 404; refuses to
fight with Dundubhi, 362; takes form as
cloud, 362
Himalayas (mountain or mountain range),
27, 30, 51, passim
Hinduism, 37; cosmic cycles in, 4 (see also
yuga(s)); cyclical time in, 37 (see also
yuga(s)); divinities of, 4; in religious
history of Mahābhārata and Rāmāyana,
40; Vaiṣṇavism as movement of, 34
historical narrative (itiḥāsa): Rāmāyana as,
4, 36–37, 39
historicity: of epics, 37; of Rāmāyana, 36
histories of the Rāmāyana, 34–41
history: concepts of, differ, 34; contestation
over Mahābhārata as, 37; of discus of
Viṣṇu, 403; of Rāmāyana, 19; of Rāma-
yana as emic, 34, 37–40;—as etic, 34; of
Śūraṅgāhā, 33; of Vālin, 26; Uttarakāṇḍa
tells, of rākṣasas and Rāvana, 16
homa (rite), 105
Homer, 3
honey-wine (madhu), 220, 394, 444, 542,
546, 647; drinking of, as sign of success,
529; as honey, 528; as honeycomb, 527;
monkeys drink, 526–30; Rāma does not
drink, 489; voided as urine, 529–30. See
also Madhuvana
horn bow (śārīrga): of Viṣṇu, 709, 737–38
horse-faced fire: with mare's head, 399
House: of the Bhārgavas, 126; of Ikṣvāku,
51, 63, 95, 121–23, 329, 356, 432, 480,
515, 521, 532, 660, 711, 724, 756; of
Janaka, 119, 454; of Kosala, 36, 690; of
Kuša, 86; of Rāghava, 74, 202, 216, 262,
316, 358, 433, 812; of Raghu, 537; of
Rāvana, 445
household priest. See purohit(s)
Hri (godess of modesty), 69, 315, 734, 853
Hṛṣīkeśa. See Viṣṇu
Hulu (gandharva lord), 227
human effort: compared with fate, 706;
destroys a person, 659; good for nothing,
110; one should devote oneself exclusively
to, 659; righteousness as auxiliary to,
659; Triśaṅku attempts to overcome fate
through, 110. See also manly effort
human flesh. See cannibalism; flesh of humans
hunchback: rākṣasa woman as, 462. See also
Mantharā
hunter(s). See Niṣāda(s)
hunting: of Daśaratha, 198; of Iļa, 833; of
kings, 311–12, 372; of Kumbhakarṇa, 627;
for golden deer, 312–13; of Lakṣmana,
191; of men, 372; of Rāma, 72, 181–82,
312–13, 316, 480; of Rāma and Lakṣmana,
187, 342; of Rāvana, 746; of Saudāsa, 812;
for Sītā, 346, 399, 403–4; for Sītā and
Rāvana, 400, 413
ideals: of Aryan culture, 27–28
ideal wife (pativrata): Kausalyā acts against
norms of, 23–24; Sītā as, 5, 22
Ikṣvāku (son of Manu, first king
of Ayodhya), 121–22, 251; Daṇḍa
youngest son of, 827; fathers sons by
means of sacrifices, 826–27; Nimi son
of, 802; as son of Manu, 802, 826
Ikṣvākus, 71, 109–10, 132, passim; ancestor
of Rāma, 36; Buddha as offshoot of lin-
eage of, 36; Daśaratha as lord of, 60;
Ikṣvākus (continued)
genealogy of, 121–22, 251–52; lineage
of, 16, 36, 121–22, 170, Rāmāyana tale
of descendants of, 58. See also House of
Ikṣvākus; House of Rāghava
Ilā: aśvamedha sacrifice of, 837; attains
Brahmaloka, 837; boons of, 834; founds
Pratiṣṭhāna, 837; Kardama father of, 833,
837; renounces kingdom, 836; transformed
into woman, 833–34
Ilā: gives birth to Purūravas, 836; Buddha
transforms attendants of, into kimpuruṣa
women, 835; propitiates Umā, 834; recov-
er manhood through aśvamedha, 837
Ilā/Ilā: story of Śiva and Pārvati and, 833–34;
story of, and Budha, 834–37
Ilia, 3
illusion (māyā). See power(s) of illusion
Ilvala (aśura): Agastya eats, 276; and Vātāpi
killed by Agastya, 276; and Vātāpi story
of, 275–76
inauspicious omens: appear at birth of
Rāvana, 29, 741;—during fight between
Rāma and Rāvana, 690; charioteer of
Rāvana turns back because of, 693; golden
trees presage death, 318, 326, 341; Kāla
brings about, 736; Lakṣmaṇa observes,
314; Mālyavān Bhārata observes observed in
Ayodhyā, 207; observed in dreams, 205;
presage abduction of Sītā, 314, 324,
330–31, 333; presage abandonment of
Sītā, 794; presage death of king, 135;
—of Rāvana, 677; presage defeat of
Akampana, 596;—of Dhūrmāksa, 594;
—of Khara, 289–91;—of Kumbhakarṇa,
621;—of Mahāpārśa, 679;—of Makarāksa,
651;—of Prahasta, 600;—of Rāvana, 695;
presage destruction of Laṅkā, 474;—of
rāksasas, 37, 542, 571, 736–37; presage
encounter with Kāndhāna, 342;—with
Rāma Jāmadagnya, 125–26. See also
inauspicious omen(s); omen(s)
incarnation. See avatāra entries; co-avatāras
India, manuscript tradition in, 6
Indra (Mahendra, Śaci’s lord, Śakra, Vāsava),
26, 32, 59, passim; abducts Hīranyakāśi-
pu’s wife, 466; aśvamedha of, 832–33; Bali
Vairavas defeats, 81; becomes a peacock,
754; Brahmā asks, to recall his evil deed,
774; Brahmā asks Indrajit to release,
773–74;—gives arrow to, 278, 298; breaks
Hanumān’s jaw, 426; Bhrašpati as purohitā
of, 723; carries off horse from Sagara’s
sacrifice, 91; casts Tīrśaṅku from heaven,
112; chariot of, 267–68, 770; crow son of,
493, 533; cuts off mountains’ wings, 433;
deforms Kāndhāna, 344; disguised as a
rāksasa, 91; earth suffers drought in
absence of, 832; enemy of Rāvana, 69;
enters Diti’s body, 99; father of Vāilīn, 71,
345, 368;—Jayanta, 770; fights Rāvana,
771–72; foretells great feat of Rāma,
267–68; Gautama curses, 101, 774; gives
arrow, 298;—arrow and quivers to Agastya,
278; food to Sītā, 422;—Hanumān epithet,
785; and gods, ask Viṣṇu to kill Vṛtra,
831;—, fear Māndhātir, 814; gods and seers
purify, 77; golden garland of, 784; grants
boon to Hanumān, 785–86;—to peacock,
754–55; grants Diti’s request, 99;
—Maināka immunity, 434; horses of, 267;
in story of sword-wielding ascetic, 272;
Indrajit defeats, 31–32, 772–73;—releases,
773–74; and the killing of Mantharā, 79;
and the killing of Vṛtra, 77, 830–32; kills
Maya, 412;—Puloman, 397;—sons of Diti,
98;—Vṛtra, 830–32; king as fourth part
of, 264; Maruts and, engage Kṛttikās, 90;
orders capture of Rāvana, 772;—Vāyu
to give Rāma golden necklace, 725;—pearl
necklace, 725; performs vaśṇava sacrifice,
775; Rāma sees, 267; Rāma’s killing of
Tātākā pleases, 79; rapes Ahalyā, 774;
requests Viṣṇu to kill Rāvana, 768;
searches for Indrajit on Airāvata, 772;
secedes Ahalyā, 100–101; seeks Hanumān
on Airāvata, 784;—Hanumān on Airāvata,
772; seizes sovereignty of the worlds,
98; sends Rambhā to tempt Viśvāmitra,
115–16;—weapons, chariot, and Mātali
to Rāma, 689; sin of brahmahatya taints,
77, 832; as slayer of dāityas, 831; smashes
Diti’s fetuses, 99; spares Śunaḥśepa, 114;
steals Ambara’s sacrificial victim, 113;
story of, and Diti; 97–99—, and Ahalyā,
100–102, 774–75; strikes Hanumān with
vajra, 426, 784; vajra of, 339, 354, 449,
passim; Vāilīn son of, 71, 345, 368;
Vāilīn’s gold necklace as gift from,
368–69; weapon-spell(s) of, 108 (Aindrā),
628, 670; as wielder of vajra, 71, 157,
199, 210, 266, 268, 278, 456, 481, 506,
556, 617, 659–60, 697, 701, 722, 778, 832;
as world guardian, 731
Indrajānu (monkey): arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā,
397
Indrajit (Rāvāni, Meghanāda), 5, 15, 506,
passim: Ağḍaṇa fights, 581, 583; arrows of,
strike and fell monkeys, 641–43;—serpent
sons of Kadrū become, 592; asceticism of,
661, 764, 773; asks Brahmā for immortal-
ity, 773; battles monkey army, 585, 641–43;
birds and captures Hanumān, 14, 27, 32,
507–8; birds Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa with
serpent arrows, 24, 32, 584–85; birth of, 747; boons of, 583, 654, 764, 773–74; bow of, 507, 764; Brahmā asks, to release Indra, 773;—denies immortality to, 773;—grants boons to, 583, 773–74;—grants epithet, “Conqueror of Indra;” 773;—grants powers to, 32; breaks army of gods, 669–770; chariot of, 507, 655, 764, 772; character synopsis of, 5, 15, 31–32; chariot of, destroyed by Aṅgada, 581; creates simulacrum of Sītā, 655–56; divine weapons and weapon-spells of, 508, 525, 584, 641–42, 661, 764; encounter of, with Hanumān, 506–9; exhots Rāvaṇa, 640; fights and captures Hanumān, 14, 27, 32, 507–8; fights and captures Hanumān, recalled, 523; fights and captures Indrajit, 31–32, 772–73; fights Aṅgada, 581–82;—Vibhiṣaṇa, 667–68; Indra searches for, on Airāvata, 772; invisibility of, 5, 583–85, 654, 664, 772; kills six hundred and seventy million monkeys, 643; Lakṣmaṇa fights and kills, 22, 665–71; Meghanāda birth name of, 747; monkey army attacks, 662–63, 668; mount of, dolphin, 476; pierces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa with arrows, 584–85, 642, 654–55;—with serpent weapons, 583–85; power of illusion of, 5, 572, 583, 588–89, 592, 641, 655–56, 661–62, 729, 772; Rāma dispatches monkeys to find, 584; Rāma hears of death of, 671;—sends Lakṣmaṇa to fight, 661; Rāvaṇa hears of death of, 672; releases Indra, 774; reports death of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 586; sacrifice(s) (agniṣṭoma; aśvamedha; bahusuvāraṇa; maheśvara; rājasūya; vaśiṇava) of, 32, 764;—interrupted, 663;—to be interrupted, 660–61;—in Nikumbhālīa grove, 641, 653–54, 657–58, 764; serpent weapons of, 24, 32, 583–85; serpent weapons of, Garuḍa drives off, 592; sets forth to capture Hanumān, 507; Śīva gives chariot to, as boon, 764;—power of illusion to, 764;—power of illusion of, called tāmasī, 764 infanticide, 209. See also feticide; child(ren): killing of inherent nature, 29, 554; as a translation of dharma, 46; force of, 378; of women, 701 inner apartments (antahpuram, women’s quarters), 246, 784, 853; Agni testifies Sītā pure while in, 710; gazing upon, of another breach of propriety, 452; gendered politics of, 12; guard dogs of, 206; of Daśaratha, 64, 70, 143, 149, 151, 168, 173–74, 192–93;—women of, 173–74, 192–93, 246; Indrajit born in, 747; of Kausalyā, 151; of Rāma, 147, 311, 791, 853; of Rāvaṇa, 33, 327, 328, 450, 452, 466, 470, 471, 472, 572, 699, 765, 782;—Hanumān searches, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32, 546;—for Sītā in, 327, 328, 532;—Vibhiṣaṇa enters to find Sītā, 705; of Romapāda, 63; of Vālī, 362, 367–68, 380, 391 Islam, 37, 39, 42 Islamic prince: Rāma as ideal of, 5n iṣṭadevatā (chosen divinity), 40 itihāsa. See historical narrative Ḫābāli (minister of Daśaratha), 64, 120, 203, 251, 255, 725, 821, 837, 841; encourages Rāma to accept kingship, 249–51 jackals. See inauspicious omens Jāhnavi. See Ganges Jain canon, 35 Jainism, 34, 37; cyclical time in, 37 Jain versions: of Rāmāyana, 5n, 36 Jamadagni (one of the seven seers), 728 Jāmādagnya. See Rāma Jāmādagnya Jāmbāvan, 390, 415, 318, 788, passim; advises against Aṅgada’s plan, 525;—Rāma to view Vibhiṣaṇa with suspicion, 550; and other monkeys struck down in battle, 643; Aṅgada discouraged by, from jumping, 424–25;—as bear, 27; declares youthful prowess, 424; directs Hanumān to bring healing herbs, 27, 643–44, 688; dissuades monkeys from plan to rescue Sītā, 525; fights Mahāpārśva, 682; gives monkeys leave to drink honey-wine, 526; guards rear of army, 541; Hanumān seeks out, on battlefield, 643; as king of apes (ṛkṣas), 27, 540, 573–74, 590–91, 658, 658, 661–62, 672, 682, 788; member of southern search party, 400, 411; participates in Rāma’s coronation, 725;—in Sugriva’s consecration, 380; questions Hanumān, 519;—Supārśva, 419; ; Rāma sends forth, to battle, 658, 661;—sends forth, to battle Kumbha, 648; renders aid to Indra, 559; smashes Mahānāda with boulder, 601; son of Gadgada, 563; struck in battle, 565; summons the monkeys, 518; troops of, attack rākṣasa army, 668; urges Hanumān to jump, 425–27 Jambumālīn (rākṣasa) (1), 443, 506, 769; Hanumān fights and kills, 500–501 Jambumālīn (rākṣasa) (2): Hanumān fights and kills, 581; Rāvaṇa orders out, 522 Janaka, 11, 21, 99, 336, passim; attends Daśaratha’s aśvamedha, 65; birth of, from Nimi’s body, 805; bow of, 83, 117–19;
Janaka (continued)
breaks siege of Mithilā, 118; etymology of name of, 805; finds Sītā while ploughing, 21, 118, 843; first king of Videha, 805; genealogy of, 122–23; grief of, 202; invites Daśaratha to Mithilā, 119–20; kills Sudhanvan, 123; sacrifice of, 83, 102, 117; Sītā daughter of (see Sītā)
Jānakī. See Sītā
Janamejaya, 200
janapada: as historical period, 35–37; meaning of word, 35
janapada(s): Aryan clans of, 35; of Kosala, 36
Janārdana. See Viṣṇu
Janasthāna, 52, 286, 288, passim; ascetics dwell in, 258; Jāṭāyus falls into, 422; located in Daṇḍaka forest, 828; Rāma battles army of fourteen thousand rākṣasas from, 292–94; Rāvana dispatches eight rākṣasas to, 327–28; Sītā implores, for aid, 320; See also Daṇḍaka forest
Jātarūpaśila (mountain), 399
Jāṭāyus: age of, 322; ally of Kosalan court, 24; attempts to save Sītā, 13, 24, 52, 322–23; battle of, with Rāvana described, 417–18; cremation of, 53, 342; death of, 341; falls into Janasthāna, 422; flies into sun, 418, 421–22; friendship of, with Daśaratha, 13, 279, 281, 417; funerary libations for, 342, 420; genealogy of creatures narrated by, 280–81; lineage of, 280–81; mortal wounding of, by Rāvana, 13, 24, 323; on behavior toward others’ wives, 321; Rāma and Lakṣaṇa meet, 279–81; —see, mortally wounded, 340; Rāma asks, to protect Sītā, 312; Rāma tells, of Sītā’s abduction, 340–41; rebukes Rāvana 321–22; evidence of battle of, with Rāvana, 337; fights Rāvana, 322–23; reassures Rāma, 341; Sampāti and, make wager on Kailāśa, 421; Sampāti discovers death of, 417; Sītā’s cries heard by, 321; story of, and Sampāti, 418, 421–22; younger brother of Sampāti, 14, 281, 416, 417
javelin(s) (sakti[s]), 47, 80, 289, passim; of Indra given to Rāma, 689; Lakṣaṇa freed from, by herbs, 688; of Mālayavān pierces Viṣṇu, 740; of Maya given to Rāvana, 746; Rāma removes and breaks Rāvana’s, 687; —shatters lance of Rāvana with, of Indra, 691; of Rāvana forged by Maya, 686; —strikes down Lakṣaṇa, 686–87; Skanda as wielder of, 740; Skanda as wielder of, 740
jaw (hanu), Hanumān breaks, falling, 426, 561, 784; from vajra, 785
Jaya (father of Virādha), 266
Jayanta (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204
Jayanta (son of Indra), fights Indrajit, 770; not slain, 775; Puloman carries from battlefield, 770; Puloman grandfather of, 770; son of Śaći, 770
jewel: Agastya gives, to Rāma, 824
jewelry, 58, 67, 564, passim; Anasūyā gives Sītā, 261; in disarray, 324; Hanumān sees, of Mandodari, 450; Kaikesi’s discards, 140, 142–43; —gives Mantharā, 139, 142; of Mantharā discards, 140; —shattered, 215; Rāvana demands Sītā wear, 465–66; —promises, to Sītā, 327; of Sītā, 56, 224, 286, 791; in disarray, 324; —dropped, 326–27, 357; —monkeys find, 357; —shown to Rāma, 357. See also hair ornament; ornament(s); signet ring
Judeo-Christian religions, 37
jumping. See leaping
jump of Hanumān. See leaping: of Hanumān
Jyotirmukha (monkey): son of Sūrya, 564
jyotiṣṭoma (rite), 68
Kabandha: describes Pampā, 346–47; description and history of, 343–44; directs Rāma and Lakṣaṇa to Pampā, 347; —Rāma to Sābari, 346–47; encounter of, with Rāma and Lakṣaṇa, 32, 53, 56, 343–47; —recalled, 460, 564, 627, 677, 697, 716, 717, 720; Lakṣaṇa cremates, 345; —cuts off left arm of, 343; Rāma cuts of right arm of, 343
Kadrū/Kadrukhā: mother of snakes, 280–81; sister of Surasā, 280–81; sons of, hold up the earth, 281; —become Indrajit’s arrows, 592
Kaikasi: curse of Viśravas on, 28–30, 741; daughter of Sumālin, 734, 740–41; inspires Rāvana with sibling envy, 29, 742; mother of Rāvana, Kumbhakarna, Viśhiṣaṇa, and Śūrpaṇakhā, 741; relationship of, with Viśravas, 28, 741
Kaikesi: 811, 830, 845, passim; achieves desired goal, 265, 320, 332; Bharata reviles, 209–11; boon(s) of, 11, 23, 265, 316–17; boons of, as cause of misfortune, 417; character synopsis of, 24; claims boons from Daśaratha, 143–44; Daśaratha accedes to demands of, 11, 143–45; Daśaratha reviles, 144–45, 175; daughter of Aśvapati, 141, 164, 210; eats celestial porridge, 70; exile of Rāma ordered by, 24; gives birth to Bharata, 71; informs Bharata of Daśaratha’s death, 207–9; —Bharata of Rāma’s exile, 208–9; —Rāma of impending exile, 150; Kausalyā reviles, 202; Lakṣaṇa criticizes, 283; Mantharā
incites, 11–12, 24, 138–43; Mantharā maidservant of, 11, 23, 24, 41; as middle mother, 265, 283; orders Rāma to wear barkcloth garments, 170–71; Rāma asks Bhadra about, 791; as Rāma’s mother, 155, 186, 244, 283, 589, 791; receives boons from Daśaratha, 141; receives new brides, 128; recounts story of sons of Sagara to Daśaratha, 170; resembling of, 12, 23; story of, as cautionary tale, 24; travels to Citrakūṭa with other mothers, 219; as treacherous wife, 24
Kaṅkāsā (mountain), 77, 89, 125, passim; description of, 405; Kubera lives on, 405, 545, 766; location of, in northern quarter, 405; Mandodari and Rāvaṇa took enjoyment on, 701; Puṣpaka comes to Rāma from, 789; Rāvaṇa fights Kubera on, 29, 299, 545, 749–51—and yakṣas on, 299; Rāvaṇa goes to, 299, 545, 749–51; Sāmpāti and Jāṭyāus make wager on, 421; Sugriva instructs Sātabali to search foothills of, 405; Viśravas tells Kubera to found a city on, 745
Kaiṭabha: and Madhu, 732, 759, 810, 817, 849
Kākutstha. See Rāma
Kakutstha (father of Raghu), 122, 252
Kāla (god of death), 74, 320, 330, passim; Bhayā as sister of, 732; Brahmagrāmat of rod of, 760; Brahmagrāmat sends, to Rāma, 848–49; brings about bad omens, 736–37; cannot be withstood, 338; created by creative power of illusion (māyā), 848–49; discus of, 108; Heti marries Bhayā sister of, 732; in guise of ascetic, 848; noose(s) of, 73, 80, 292, 298, 321, 323, 326, 512, 548, 574, 664, 760, 846; overtakes Rāvaṇa, 330; power of, 343, 587–88; Rāma’s son in previous existence, 848–49; Rāvaṇa fights, 757–60; rod of, 749, 759–60, 769; sanvartāstā (sanvartā) as weapon of, 846. See also Dharmarāja; Kṛtānta; Mrtyu; Vaivasvata; Yama
Kālakeyas (clan of dailyas), 763; four hundred killed by Rāvaṇa, 761
Kālarātri, 583, 634; Sitā as, 511, 566
Kālindī (mother of Sagara), 252
Kālindī (river), 190, 398
Kali Yuga, 37, 38, 821. See also Tīṣya
Kalmāṣapāda. See Mitrasaḥa Saudāsa
kalpas. See cosmic cycles
kalpasūtra, 67
Kāmbojas: northern quarter as location of country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107
Kampana (rākṣasa), 668; Āṅgada fights and kills, 647–48
Kāmpilyā (capital city of Brahmadatta), 86
Kāñcana (purohitā of Śatrughna), 852
Kandarpa. See Kāma
Kanḍu (ascetic), advice of, 552; curses forest, 409; kills cow, 154; obeys father’s commands, 154; son of, perishes in forest, 409
Kārāpatha (region), 847
Kardama Prajāpati: father of Ila, 833, 837; proposes aśvamedha dedicated to Śiva, 837
Kaṅnaprāvaṇas (name of a people), 399
Kārtavirya. See Arjuna Kārtavirya
Kārtika: month of, 380
Kārtikeya. See Skanda
Kāśi: Pratardana lord of, 787; Purūravas king of, 804
Kāśyapa, 121, 134, 203, 251
Kāśyapa, 154, 791
Kāśyapa: Aditi wife of, 280, 744
Kāśyapa: brahman seer, 64, 120, 203, 725, 728 (Kāśyapa), 821, 841
Kāśyapa: Diti wife of, 98 (Kāśyapa), 280, 744. See also Mārica Kāśyapa
Kāśyapa: one of the Prajāpatis, 280, 744
Kāśyapa: one of the seven seers, 728
Kāśyapa: patronymic of Śrīyaśiriṣa, 62; performs Daśaratha’s aśvamedha, 64
Kāśyapa: Rāma Jāmadagnya gives earth to, 126–28
Kāśyapa: son of, Vibhāndaka, 61
Kāśyapa: son of Mārici, 121, 251. See also Mārici Kāśyapa
Kāśyapa: Vivasvant son of, 122, 251
Kāśyapa (brahman seer), 837
Kausalāyā, 71, 76, 140, passim; asks to follow Rāma into exile, 23–24, 157–58; at death of Daśaratha, 201–2; blesses Rāma, 158–59; character synopsis of, 23–24; eats celestial porridge, 70; fasting of, 230; gives amulet to Rāma, 159; gives birth to Rāma, 71; goes to the forest with Bharata, 219; goes to Nandigrāma to meet Rāma, 721; grief of, 152–54, 157–59, 174–77, 188, 192, 195–96, 201–2, 209, 211–12, 223, 230, 242–44; ideal maternal figure, 23; implores Rāma to remain in Ayodhya, 153–54; inner apartments of, 151; learns of Rāma’s consecration, 135–36; meets Bharadvāja, 230; meets with Rāma on Mount Citrakūṭa, 243–44; mother of Rāma, 12, 23, 266,
Kausalyā (continued)

332, passim; participates in aśvamedha, 67;— in Daśaratha's funerary rites, 213; Rāma greets, upon return, 723;—informs, of his impending exile, 152;—reminds, of wifely duty, 24, 157–58; receives new brides, 128; relationship of, with Daśaratha, 23; reviles Bharata, 211;—Daśaratha, 195–96;—Kaikeyī, 202; sees Rāma's offerings for Daśaratha, 243; Sunmantra consoles, 195; Sumitrā consoles, 177; supports Daśaratha, 175–76

Kauśambī: Kuśāmba founds, 84

Kauśika (patronymic of Viśvāmitra).

See Viśvāmitra

Kauśika (river), 115, 398; rescued from Pātāla, 494; sister of Viśvāmitra, 86

cāvī (seer or poet), 39

cāvya (poetry), 4

cāvya, Uśanas. See Uśanas Čāvya

Kerala, 400

Kesarīn (monkey): adoptive father of Hanumān, 397, 428, 783; Ājñā woman of, 425, 783; Ājñā, Vāyu, and, try to restrain, 786; arrival of, in 397; kills Śambāsādana, 487; troop leader, 541, 560, 590

Keśava: sleeping of, 383. See also Viṣṇu

Keśinī (mother of Asāmanīja), 91

Ketumati (mother of Dhumrākṣa), 734

Kharā (brother of Rāvana; rākṣasa), 32–33; dispatches fourteen rākṣasas, 286;—fourteen thousand rākṣasas, 289; doom of, presaged by omens, 289–91; Dūṣāna general of, 289; Rāma admonishes, 296; Rāma and, mock each other, 297–98; Rāma battles and destroys army of, 12, 287–88, 291–94;—Kaśya, 52, 56, 295–98;—Kharā recalled, 300–301, 303, 307, 314, 321–23, 327, 329, 460–61, 480, 547, 564–65, 585, 627, 677, 692, 697, 700, 716;—told about activities of, 258; Rāvana sends, to Daṇḍaka forest, with Dūṣāna, 763–64; Śūrpanakhā taunts, 288;—tells, of death of fourteen rākṣasas, 288;—tells, of disfigurement, 286;—tells Rāma about, 284

kimkaraśas: Hanumān battles, 499–500

kimpuruśas (class of semi-divine beings), 835

kimipuruśa women: Budha transforms Ilā's attendants into, 835

kinnaras, 313

kinnara women, 71,143, 301; Budha transforms Ilā's attendants into, 835

Kīrtās (name of a people), 399

Kīrti (godess of fame), 69, 315, 734

Kiṣkindhā, 14, 20, 24, passim; arrival of monkeys in, 397–98; as cave, 53, 373, 378–81, 385, 390, 561; departure of Sugriva with Lakṣmaṇa from, 395; description of, 390–91; Lakṣmaṇa enters, 388; moral and ethical tone of, 14; Rāma will not enter, 379–80; summoning of monkeys to, 393–95

Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa, 361–428; synopsis of, 13–14

Kosalā: Ajātaśatrū defeats janapada of, 36; Ayodhyā capital of, 10; consecration of Kuśa in, 851–52; country of, 58

Krathana. See Skanda

Krāuṇa (forest): Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa encounter Kābandha in, 342

Krāuṇa (mountain): birds pass through, 738; inaccessible opening in, 405

kruṇa(s) (bird): killing of, by Niśāda, 54; third path in sky, that of, 419

Krṣṇa: as avatāra (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 21, 35, 38, 40; Rāma as, 709, 710

Krťānta, 153. See also Dharmarāja; Mṛtyu; Vaivasvata; Yama

Krṭa Yuga, 21, 54, 729, 753–54, 808, 821, 826, 843; mountains have wings during, 433; sons of Diti powerful in, 97

Krṣaśva's sons: divine weapons, 75; Indra tells Viśvāmita to bestow on Rāma, 79; take on form at will, 81; Viśvāmitra intones mantras for, 81

Krṛti kāś (Pleiades): provide milk for Skanda, 90

ksatriyadharma (warrior code), 20

ksatriya(s), 11, 54, 84, passim: ascetics in

Tretā Yuga, 821; born from the breast of Manu, 280; bow of, compared to kindling, 272; code of, inapropos to forest life, 272; come to be of equal power to brahmins in Krta and Tretā Yogas, 821; code of, 127; eating of five-clawed animals by, 370; extermination of, 127; Ikṣvākus as, 266; in list of four social classes, 40, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; power of brahmins greater than, 106, 108–9; Rāma asks Śambāka if he is, 822; Rāvana oppresses, 752; role of, in the yugas, 821; Śiśa's oath witnessed by, 842

Kuberā Vaivasvata: acquires Puspaka from Brahmma, 446; asram of, 730–31; austerities of, 730–31, 748; becomes a lizard, 754; birth of, 730; Brahmma gives Puspaka to, 731;—grants boons to, 731;—makes world guardian, 731; curses Tumburu as Viṛadhā, 266–67; curses Tumburu to become Viṛadhā because of Rambahā, 267; Devavarnī mother of, 730; dwelling of, 468;—built by
Viśvakarman, 405;—in Laṅkā, 437, 731;—on Mt. Kailāsa, 405; evacuates Laṅkā, 745; founds Laṅkā, 731; friendship of, with Śiva, 748; genealogy of, 729–31; grants boon to Hanumān, 786;—to lizard, 755; half-brother of Rāvana, 29, 74, 318–19, 329, 341, 637, 674, 700, 742, 744, 747, 754, 767, 789; heavenly forest of, 227; history and etymology of epithet Ekākṣipīngala, 748; king of yakṣas, 405; left eye of burned by gazing at Pārvaṭi, 748; mount of, elephant Sārvabhauma, 405; pleases Śiva, 748; Puspaka belongs to, 731, 742; Rāvana fights and defeats, and yakṣas, 29, 299, 749–51;—recalled, 545;—conquers, 299, 446, 545, 749–51;—envious of, 29;—seizes Puspaka of, 318, 751; Rāvana’s enmity with, 29, 742, 744–51; son of Viśravas, 730; Viśravas tells, to found a city on Kailāsa, 745; as world guardian, 545, 731

Kuśā: first path in sky, that of, 419

Kumāra. See Skanda

Kumbha (son of Kumbhakarṇa), 604, 647, 668; fights Aṅgada and Dwivida, 648; Sugriva fights and kills, 649–50;—recalled, 751

Kumbhakarṇa (brother of Rāvana): agrees to attack Rāma and the monkeys, 617; Aṅgada claims, is scarecrow, 621; army of, fights army of monkeys, 620–27; assaults gods, 771; austerities of, 742; birth of, 28–29, 741; Brahmā curses, to perpetual sleep, 609–10, 614;—orders Sarasvatī to take over speech of, 31, 743–44;—tricks under pretext of boon, 743–44; brother of Rāvana, 15; cannibalism of, 743; captures and releases Sugrīva, 625–26; cave of, as dwelling, 610; characters synopsis of, 31; comically grotesque figure, 5; craves flesh, 626; decimates monkey army, 624; devours allies, 626;—monkeys, 624;—seven apsarasas, 743;—thousands of beings, 613; discourse of, on statecraft (nitiśāstra) to Rāvana, 31, 615–16, 619; drenches earth with flesh, 624; driven by fate, 621; dwelling of, sleeping chamber, 610, 747; episode of, 610–28; feats of, 613–14; fights and dazes Hanumān, 623–34; Gavākṣa fights, 623; gods remind Brahmā of crimes of, 743;—stop Brahmā from granting boon to, 743; hunting of, 627; inauspicious omens follow, 621; intoxication of, 613–14; Kaikāsi mother of, 741; Kumbha and Nikumbha sons of, 647; Mahodara rebukes, 617–19; monkeys terrified of, 613, 621–22; Rāma fights and kills, 626–28; Rāvana orders awakening of, 610; sleep of, 31, 610, 744, 747; Sugrīva tears off ears and nose of, 625–26; Vajrāyāḷī wife of, 746–47; Viśravas father of, 28–29; waking of, 610–11; Yūpākṣa informs, of siege of Laṅkā, 612

Kumbhīnasi (1): daughter of Sumālīn, 734

Kumbhīnasi (2): Analā mother of, 765, 808; Madhu abducts, 764–65; wife of Madhu, 545, 765, 808; Viśvāvasu father of, 808

Kunjara (mountain): Viśvakarman builds palace for Agastya on, 401

Kurus: northern quarter location of country of, 404; vedic clan and region of, associated with Mahābhārata, 35, 36, 227, 233, 404, 406

Kuśa (companion of Rāma), 791

Kuśa (son of Brahmā/Prājāpati): attains Brahmaloka, 86; father of Kuśānābha, 103; founder of Kuśāmbi, 84; Viśvāmi of, 86

Kuśa (son of Rāma), 6, 17, 18–19; consecration of, in Kosala, 851–52; lives with mother (Sītā) in exile, 6; Rāma finds Kuśāmati for, 852;—recognizes as son 10, 842; recites Rāmāyaṇa, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41; Sītā gives birth to, 17, 813; Vālmiki gives amulet to, 813;—names, 813; wears barkcloth garments, 840. See also disciple(s) of Vālmiki

kuśa (type of grass), 98, 101, 137, passim;
Vālmiki creates amulet for Kuśa from, 813

Kuśādhvaja (father of Vedavatī), 752

Kuśādvaja (brother of Janaka), 121

Kuśāmba (son of Kuśa): founds Kuśāmbi, 84

Kuśānābha, 84–87; father of Gadhī, 86, 104; founds Mahodaya, 84; hundred daughters of, 84–86; son of Kuśa, 84, 103–4

Kuśāvati: Rāma finds, for Kuśa, 852

kūṭaśālmalī tree, 399. See also śālmalī

Lake Mānas. See Mānas

Lake Pampā. See Pampā

Lakṣmaṇa, passim; accepts advice of Tārā, 393; accompanies Rāma into exile, 11, 52, 174–723;—on journey with Viśvāmitra, 9, 75–129; Agastya tells Rāma and, to go to Paṇcavati, 279; alarm of Sugrīva at anger of, 389; Aṅgada as mount of, 541; anger of, at exile of Rāma, 11, 151;—toward Bharata, 266;—toward Sugrīva, 387–90, 392; announces arrival of Durvāsas, 850; appoints Viśiṣṭa as king of the rākṣasas, 552; apologizes to Sugrīva, 393; arrives at Lake Pampā, 351; ascetics show hospitality to Rāma and, 264–65; asks and is
Lakṣmaṇa (continued)
denied permission to exterminate rākṣasas, 655; asks to use weapon-spell of Brahmā, 655; assigned to breach Laṅkā's northern gate, 574; begs permission to fight Rāvana, 605;—of Rāma to take him to forest, 164–65; beheads Rāvana's charioteer, 685–86; bids farewell to his mother, 172; birth of, 71; breaks Virādha's left arm, 266; brings wood for Jāṭāyus' cremation, 342; builds a pyre for fire ordeal of Sītā, 708;—hut for Rāma and Sītā in Pañcāvati, 282; challenges Indrajit, 664; chides Rāma for fainthearted speech, 266, 689; childhood of, 72; claims the weak and cowardly submit to fate, 156; co-avatāra with brothers, 4, 10, 22, 70–71, 608; conciliates Sugrīva, 393; consecrates Vibhīṣaṇa as king of Laṅkā, 702–3; consoles Rāma, 335, 338–40, 381–82, 386, 658–60, 800; cremates Kabhandha, 345; criticizes Kaikēyi, 283; cuts off Kabhandha's left arm, 343; cuts Rāvana's javelin to pieces, 686; dejection of, 799; delivers critique of dharma (righteousness), 658–60; departs from Kiṣkindhā with Sugrīva, 395; describes ascetic life of Bharata, 283;—winter season, 282–83; descriptions of, 22, 354, 561; desolate, 153, 155, 799; on destiny, 339; devotion of, to Rāma, 72, 355; diverts Śūrpanākha to Rāma, 285; dons the clothing of an ascetic, 170; dwells apart from Rāma for a year in Aṅgadīya, 847; embraces fainting Rāma, 658; emotional foil to Rāma, 11, 22; enters abode of Sugrīva, 391;—Daṇḍaka forest with Rāma, 12, 263–64;—heaven in earthly body, 851;—yogic trance, 851; exhortation of, 381, 386–87; fights Rāvana, 607–8; fights and kills Atikāya, 638–40;—Indrajit, 665–71;—Virūpākṣa (son of Rāvana), 581; finds Rāma in forest, 331; fourth part of Viṣṇu, 851 (see also Lakṣmaṇa: co-avatāra); Garuḍa heals wounds of Rāma and, 592; gives away his wealth, 166;—gajapuṣpi to Sugrīva, 364–65; gods grant boon to, 817; grief of, 313, 482, 491, 497, 658, 765–96, 799–800; guards door for Rāma, 848;—Sītā, 312; Hanumān able to lift, 608;—introduces Rāma and, to Sugrīva, 356; hears of Durvūsas' prophecies from Sumantra, 799;—recitation of Rāmāyaṇa, 58;—tales of Nṛga, Nimi and Yayāti from Rāma, 800–807; holds regalia for Rāma's planned consecration, 148; ideal younger brother, 5, 22; Indrajit binds Rāma and, with serpent weapons, 24, 32, 584–85; Indrajit reports death of Rāma and, 586; joins Rāma in battling Rāvana, 685–86; Kabandha freed from curse by;—learns of Rāghavas' identities from, 344;—relates history to Rāma and, 344;—seizes Rāma and, 343; Kaikēyi orders, to wear bark-cloth garments, 170–71; kills Indrajit, 670–71;—Mahāpārśva, 715; learns of Rāma's planned consecration as prince regent, 135–36; leaves Ayodhāya with Rāma, 173;—Sītā unprotected, 13, 314, 331; lives with Rāma in cave during rainy season, 380–81; marries Īrmilā, 123–25; monkeys announce arrival of, 388;—and, interrupt Indrajit's sacrifice, 662–63; mutilates Śūrpanākha, 12, 285–86; on nature of women, 314; only human ally of Rāma, 24; opposes Rāma's exile, 153; paired constantly with Rāma, 10, 72; pierces Kumbhakarna with arrows, 626; Rāma and, encounter Virādha, 265–67;—break Virādha's arms, 266;—meet Jāṭāyus, 279–81;—meet Sugrīva, 391;—rescue Sītā, 267;—tease Śūrpanākha, 285; Rāma banishes, 19, 851–52;—calms, 387–88;—confides in, 187–88;—could never find brother or companion like, 589;—directs, to find Sugrīva, 350;—dwells with, in Pañcāvati, 12, 281–84;—goes to Pañcāvati with;—279;—grieves for (see Lakṣmaṇa: Rāma laments for);—informs, of intention to abandon Sītā, 792–94;—instructs, to arrange aṣvamedha, 837–38;—laments for, 22, 589–90, 688;—lectures, on righteousness, 154; offers to share sovereignty with, 136;—orders banishment of, 850;—orders, to abandon Sītā, 794–97;—orders, to guard door, 848;—prevents, from exterminating all rākṣasas;—rebukes, 331–33;—sends, into hiding with Sītā, 291;—sends, to warn Sugrīva, 386–87;—tells, to call off the consecration, 155;—and, visit Agastya, 52, 276–79;—and, visit Agastya's brother, 52, 275–76; Rāvana pierces with Brahmā's javelin, 608;—strikes down, with javelin, 686–87;—unable to lift, 608; reaches Pampā, 348; recalls he is inconceivable portion of Viṣṇu, 608; recommends rājasīyā to Rāma 830; reconciliation of, with Sugrīva, 393; refusal of, to gaze on Sītā, 21; rejects Śūrpanākha, 285; rejoins battle between Rāma and Kumbhakarna, 626; relationship of, with Rāma, 72, 493–94, 589; reports to Rāma on abandonment of Sītā,
lament of abducted Brahīṣaṇa, 686; second life breath of Rāma, 2, 22, 72, 136, 561; sees inauspicious omens, 314; senses Rāma’s intentions, 708; sets out for battle with Indrajit, 662;—for Mount Rṣyāmūkā, 352; shoots arrows at Rāvana, 683; shreds Rāvana’s battle standard, 685; Śitā accuses, of treachery, 13, 313–14;—laments for Rāma and, 587–88;—left alone in ashram by, 314;—left alone in ashram by recalled, 356;—rebuked by, 314;—requests, to rescue Rāma, 313;—sees Rāma and, wounded, 587;—sends, to rescue Rāma, 313; son Aṅgada consecrated in Aṅgadīya, 847; son Candraketu consecrated in Candrakāntā, 847; son of Daśāratha and Sūmītrā, 122; and Sugrīva accept advice of Vībhīṣaṇa, 553; Sumantra consoles, 799; Sūmītrā instructs, on conduct, 173;—urges submission to Rāma, 172–73; Śūrpaṇaḥ describes, to Rāvana, 301; Śuṣeṇa frees, with healing herbs, 27, 688; suspects golden deer is a rākṣasa, 311; Sutikṣaṇa directs Rāma and, to visit asramas of Agastyā and Agastyā’s brother, 275; tells Rāma exemplary story of Indra, 830–33; terror of Aṅgada at arrival of, 388–89; threatens to slay Bharata and Kaikēyī, 234–35; twin brother of Śatrughna, 71; urges Rāma to defy order of exile, 156—to kill Rāvana, 688–89;—to proceed with consecration, 156; urges search for Sītā, 335; virtues of, extoled by Guha to Bharata, 221–22; visits Śārabhāṅga, 268;—Śutikṣaṇa, 269–71, 274–75; vital glow of, 586, 589; vital points (vitals) of, pierced by Indrajit’s arrows, 584–85; vows to accompany Rāma into exile, 153, 164–65;—to avert fate by manly action, 156;—to dethrone Daśāratha, 157; warns Rāma of arrival of Bharata’s army, 234–36; wears barkcloth garments, 11, 481, 485 Lakṣmī (goddess of wealth and fortune), 315, 445, 561, 568, 710, 843 Lamba (mountain): Hanumān’s leap to, 436–37, 439; Laṅka located on, 439. See also Ariṣṭā; Trikūṭa lament: of abducted women, 762–63; of Bharata for Daśāratha, 208, 213–14; of brahman for child, 820; of Daśāratha for Rāma, 52, 56, 144, 171, 173, 175–77, 194–95; dead person derives no benefit from, 378; of Hanumān for Sītā, 460; of Kauśalyā for Daśāratha, 202, 211;—Rāma, 153–54, 176–77, 192; of Mandodari for Rāvana, 33, 700–701, 716; of rākṣasa women for Rāvana, 699–700; of Rāma for his exile, 187–88;—Jaṭāyus, 53, 56, 340–41;—Lakṣmaṇa, 89–90, 688;—Sītā, 13, 56, 334–36, 341, 351–52, 357, 385, 543–44; of Rāvana for Indrajit, 672–73;—Kumbhakarṇa, 629;—rākṣasas, 677–78; of Śitā, 473–75, 477–78, 567, 587–88, 674;—over simulacra of Rāma’s head and bow, 566–67; of Tārā for Vālīn, 56, 374–77, 379; true men do not, 629; of Vībhīṣaṇa for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 591; of wives of Daśāratha, 213, 217;—the rākṣasas, 676–78;—the townsmen, 180–81;—Vālīn, 374–75 lance(s) (śūlai[s]), passim; history of Lavaṇa’s, 808–9, 814; Lavaṇa fights Śatrughna with, 814–17; of Lavaṇa returns to Śiva (Rudra), 817; Rāma shatters Rāvana’s, with javelin of Indra, 691; Śiva grants, to Madhu as boon, 808, 811 langur(s) (Semnopithecus entellus), 189, 280, 381, 396, 712; Gavākṣa as king of, 397; gods take birth as, 70–71; numbers of, 393, 559, 580, 583; rākṣas identified as, 47 Laṅkā, 4, 13, 15, passim; compared to a woman, 437–38, 440;—to Amarāvati, 319; description of, 319, 437–50, 539, 575–76, 734; Hanumān arrives at, 437, 439;—attacks and burns, 14, 27, 514–15, 540, 544, 782–83;—fights rākṣasas in, 782–83;—leaps to, 429–37, 782;—searches, 437, 439–59, 513, 782; impregnability of, 440, 474, 539, 734, passim; inauspicious omens in, 736–37; Kubera (Vaishravana) dwells in, 437, 731;—evacuates, 745;—on peak of Trikūṭa (=Lamba), 437, 439, 538, 575; monkeys burn, 645–46;—lay siege to 579–80; Nala and monkeys build bridge to, 554–55; number of rākṣasas in, 392; rākṣasas abandon, 731, 740, 744;—flee to, 737–38, 740;—live in, 731, 734–36, 738–740, 744–45; Rāma crosses bridge to, with army, 555;—positions monkey chiefs to attack, 577–78;—tells Vībhīṣaṇa to rule, 789; Rāvana brings abducted women to, 763;—positions rākṣasa chiefs to defend, 572;—takes possession of, 744–46;—takes Sītā to, 328; Sītā predicts doom of, 474; Śūrpaṇakha goes to, 298–99; Vībhīṣaṇa consecrated as de facto king of, 14, 702–3; Viśvakarman builds, 437, 731, 734
Lava (son of Rāma), 6, 17, 18–19; consecration of, in Śrāvati, 851–52; lives with mother (Śitā) in exile, 6; Rāma finds Śrāvati for, 852;—recognizes as son 10, 842; recites Rāmāyaṇa with Kuśa, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41; Śitā gives birth to, 17, 813; Vālmiki gives amulet to, 813;—names, 813; wears barkcloth garments, 840. See also disciple(s): of Vālmiki Lavaṇa: arrow that kills, enters Rāmacandra, 817; cannibalism of, 814; Ceyavana asks Rāma for protection from, 17–18, 808–9;—tells story of Māndhātṛ and, 814–15; disregards ancestors of Śrātrugna and Rāma, 815; fights and kills Māndhātṛ, 814–15; history of, 808–9;—lance of, 809, 811, 814–17; Madhu gives lance to, 809, 811;—oppresses ascetics, 809; Rāma sends Śrātrugna to kill, 17–18, 809–11; Śrātrugna fights and kills, 17–18, 23, 32, 815–17; story of, 17–18, 809–17 leaping: of Hanumān, 14, 53, 56, 429–37, 516–18, 547, 561, 706;—to mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688;—to sun, 426–27; of ocean, discussion of, by monkeys, 423–25;—from Mount Arīṣṭa by Hanumān, 516–18;—from Mount Mahendra by Hanumān, 429–37;—Vāyu assists in, 432;—preparation by Hanumān for, 427–28, 516–17; prowess of monkeys in, 424–25 legacy of the Rāmāyaṇa, 41–43 lifting of mountain by Rāvaṇa, 30, 752 lineage: and adventures of Rāvaṇa, 74, 728–82; of Aṅgirasas, 786; of Bhṛgus, 786; of Daśaratha, 121–22; Heti founds, of rākṣasas, 732; of Ikṣvāku, Brahmā sires, 121, 251; of Janaka 122–23; of Jātāyu, 280–81; of Kubera, 729–31; of Paulastya, 74; of rākṣasas, 740–42; of royal epic dynasties. See also genealogy; Lunar Dynasty; Solar Dynasty; vamśa(s); vamśāvali(s) līṇga: Rāvaṇa worships, 30, 776 lives, previous. See birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation lizard: eating of, by brahmans and kshatri- yas, 370; Kubera becomes, 754;—grants boon to, 755; Nṛga cursed to become, 801–2 Lohamukhas (name of a people), 399 lord of Śaci. See Indra love in separation, 351–52, 382–83 Lunar Dynasty (Candravamsa), 36 Madana. See Kāma Mādhava. See Viṣṇu Mādhavi (earth goddess), 19, 843. See also Dharani; Vasudhā mādhavi (type of creeper), 352 Madhu: and Kaiṭabha, 732, 759, 810, 817, 849; Viṣṇu as crusher of, 137;—killer of, 128, 709 Madhu (asura or dānava lord): as ally of Rāvana, 765–66; bestows lance on Lavaṇa, 808–9; carries off and marries Kumbhīnas (2) 545,764–65; Ceyavana tells story of, 808; father of Lavaṇa, 808, intent on righteousness, 808; receives lance from Rudra, 808, 811; Śrātrugna consecrated in city of, 809–10 madhu (type of wine), 390. See also honey-wine Madhupuri (city of Madhu). See Madhurā Madhurā: Rāma sends messengers to, 852; Rāma sends Śrātrugna back to, 18, 820; Śrātrugna founds, as capital of the Śūrasenas, 18, 23, 817–18 Madhusūdana. See Viṣṇu Madhuvana (honey-wine grove) (1): guarded by Dadhimukha, 526; Ṛksarasahas prohibits entrance into, 528; southern search party destroys, 14, 525–32; Sugriva protects, 526–31 Madhuvana (honey-wine grove) (2): Lavaṇa kills Māndhātṛ in, 814–15; the region around Madhurā, 809, 814 Maṇḍagā: Ajātaśatru king of, 36; region of, 84, 399 Maṇḍadhi (river), 84 magic. See power(s) of illusion magical weapons. See weapon(s); weapons—spells Mahābhārata, 4, 21, 21n, 35–39; adhyāyas (chapters) of, 9n; comparison of Rāmā- yaṇa with, 20; fraternal conflict as theme of, 26; “Great Tale of the Bhāratas,” 36; as history, 37; as itihāsa, 4; metrical style of, 8; number of casualties in war in, 39; relationship of, to Bhagavadgītā, 13, 35; in religious history of Hinduism, 40; sister epic of Rāmāyaṇa, 47; takes place in Dvāpara Yuga, 38; theme of, 20; as Vaiṣṇava work, 35 Mahādeva. See Śiva Mahākapāla (rākṣasa general): Rāma fights and kills, 291–93 Mahāpadma (one of the elephants who support the earth), 92, 635, 776. See also Padma Mahāpārśva (minister of Rāvaṇa): Aṅgada fights and kills, 682–83; joins assault on the gods, 769; riddles Aṅgada, Jámbavān, and Gāvakṣa with arrows, 682; among
ministers who kill and devour ministers of Arjuna Kārtavīrya, 777–78; wreaks havoc on Aṅgada's forces, 682
Mahāpārśva (younger brother of Rāvaṇa): Rṣabha fights and kills, 635
mahāprasthāna (departure from the world): of Rāma recounted, 853–85
Mahārāja (Great King), as title, 35
Mahāsenā. See Skanda
mahāyuga (great cosmic cycle), 37
Mahendra (god). See Indra
Mahendra (mountain), 542; Hanumān climbs and crushes, 427–30;—leaps from, 429–36; Hanumān's association with, 517; placed on southern shore by Agastya, 401; vidyā- dhara flies up from, 430
Mahēśvara: sacrifices to, 395, 744, 754, 764; See also Śiva
māheśvara (sacrifice): of Indrajit (Meghānāda), 764; of Marutta, 744
Mahodara (minister of Rāvaṇa): advises Kumbhakarna to seek Rāvaṇa's advice, 612; battles sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 762; charges Aṅgada, 633; fights Sugrīva, 681–82; mounts the elephant Sudarśana, 630; Nila kills, 634; one of Rāvaṇa's six ministers, 749, 776–78; proposes a ruse to induce Sītā to submit, 618–19; rebukes Kumbhakarna, 617–19
Mahodaya (city), 111; Kuśa Mahodaya (brahmanūpa), 749, 776–78; proposes a ruse for counsellors, 617–19
Mahodaya (brahman): Viṣvāmitra curses, 111
Mahodaya (city), 111; Kuśanābha founds, 84
Maināka (mountain) (1): addresses Hanumān, 433; barrier against asuras, 432; granted immunity by Indra, 434; Hanumān caresses, 517; encounter of Hanumān with, 432–34; hidden beneath the ocean, 432; Indra grants immunity to, 434; resting place for Hanumān, 432–34; rises out of ocean, 432; Vāyu saves, 433
Maināka (mountain) (2): home of the horse-faced women, 405; lies beyond Mount Krauhā, 405, palace of Maya located on, 405
Maina (monkey troop leader), 380, 390, 440, passim; arrives in Kiśkindhā, 397; boon of, from Brahmā, 525; cut down in battle, 565; declares prowess in jumping, 424; drinks nectar of immortality, 525, 560; fights and kills Vajramuṣṭi, 581–82; in southern search party, 400, 411; invulnerability of, 525; Kaikeyi embraces, 722; knows good and bad policy, 550; number of troops of, 397; participates in Sugrīva's consecration, 380; Rāma gives gifts to, 742; son of the Āśvins, 397, 525, 564; takes pcket duty, 543. See also Dvīvida
maireya wine. See wine: maireya
Maithili. See Sītā
Makarākṣa (son of Khara): inauspicious omens of, 651; Rāma fights and kills, 652–53; Rāvaṇa orders to command army, 651; reviles Rāma as killer of Khara, 652
Malaya (mountain[s]) (1): Agastya seated on, 401, Hanumān announces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Sugrīva on, 356;—swears by, 489, 496; monkey army marches through, 542; southern mountain of spices, 227; Vāṅga fights and kills Dundubhi in cave of, 408
Malaya (mountain[s]) (2): Hanumān tears off summit of, 625;—sees, on approach to Laṅkā, 436; of Laṅkā, 496, 536
Mālin (great uncle of Rāvaṇa): account of, 734–39; austerities of, 733; battles gods, 738–49; boons of, 733, 735–36; bows of, 738; Devavati mother of, 733; fights Garuḍa, 738–39; sons of, become ministers of Viśbhīṣana, 734; strikes Garuḍa with mace, 738; Viṣṇu fights and kills, 738–39. See also Mālyavān; Sūkeśa: sons of, attack the world of the gods; Sumālīn
Malla: Rāma founds Candrakāntā in, 847
Mālyavān (great uncle of Rāvaṇa), 765; account of, 734–39; as Anālā daughter of, 734; as Anālā, granddaughter of, 765; austerities of, 733; battles gods, 739–40; boons of, 733, 735–36; chides Viṣṇu, 739; Devavati mother of, 733; discourse on statecraft of, 570–71; eldest son of Sūkeśa, 735; flees to Laṅkā, 739; foretells destructions of rākṣasas, 570–72; Garuḍa drives off, 740; husband of Sundari, 734; lectures Rāvaṇa, 571; paternal uncle of Rāvaṇa's mother, 570; Rāvaṇa accuses, of treachery and humiliates him, 572; strikes Viṣṇu with lance, 740; urges Rāvaṇa to make peace with Rāma, 570–72; Viṣṇu pierces, with javelin, 740. See also Mālin; Sūkeśa: sons of, attack the world of the gods; Sumālīn
Mālyavān (mountain): meeting of Sugrīva on, with Rāma, 395–96; Rāma lives on, 382. See also Prasravāṇa
Mānasa (lake): Brahmā creates, 77; etymology of name of, 77; flooding of, 747; hamsas yearn to live on, 382; and Saramā, 747
Mānasa (mountain), 405
Māṇḍākarnī (ascetic): asceticism of, 274; creates Pañcāpsaras, 274
Mandākini (river), 269; description of, 233–34. See also Ganges
Mandara (mountain), 193, 318, 388, *passim*; gods and demons churn, 97–99, 469, 620; Hanumān swears by, 489; monkeys summoned from, 394; Sālakātaṅkātā gives birth on, 732; twin peaks of, 449; Viśvakarman grants Nala’s mother boon on, 554

Māṇḍavī: marriage of, to Bharata, 125

Mandheas (name of a clan of rākṣasas), 399

Māṇḍhāṭ (ancestor of Rāma), 122, 252; Indra and gods fear, 814; Lavāna fights and kills, 814–15; punishes mendicant, 371

Mandodari (wife of Rāvana), 33; diverts Rāvana, 521; gives birth to Meghanāda Indrajit, 747; Hanumān mistakes, for Sītā, 450; Hemā mother of, 746; laments Rāvana, 33, 700–701, 716; marriage of, to Rāvana, 746; Maya father of, 746

Māṇibhadrā/Māṇicara (yakṣa): strikes down Dhūmrākṣa in battle, 750

manly effort, 156, 494, 659, 706 (action).

See also human effort

Manmatha. See Kāma

Mantharā (daughter of Virocanā): Indra kills, 79


Mantrapāla (minister of Daśaratha), 60

Manu: builder of Ayodhya, 58; Iksvāku son of, 802, 826–27; son of Vivavant (Vaivasvata), 121, 251

manuscript(s): evidence from, as basis for emendations, 5n; materials of, 8; of northern recension, 9n; of Rāmāyaṇa, 7–8; sargas in, 45; tradition of in India, 6; perishability of, 8

Mārīcaka (rākṣasa minister of Rāvana): 56; abandons golden deer form at death, 312–13; admonishes Rāvana, 304; agrees to command of Rāvana, 309; attempts to dissuade Rāvana, 52, 304–7; becomes a golden deer, 13, 32, 309–313;—recalled 720; captivates Sītā, 13; character of, 32; cries out for help in Rāma’s voice, 13, 313; description of, as golden deer, 309–10; fasting of, 303; fears Rāma, 307; feasts on flesh of seers, 305; fights yaksas, 749–50; flees battle, 750–51; flies to Rāma’s ashram with Rāvana, 309; foretells destruction of Rāvana and rākṣasas, 306, 309; Lakṣmana suspects true identity of, as deer, 311; lures Rāma off, 13, 32, 52, 309–10, 312; obstructs Viśvāmitra’s sacrifice with Subhāu, 10, 73–74, 82–83, 306; one of Rāvana’s six ministers, 744, 749, 751, 769, 776–78; power of illusion of, 325–26; praises Rāma, 304; Rāma kills, 13, 32, 56, 312–13;—kills recalled, 627, 697, 717, 720;—pursues 13, 312;—stuns, 10, 83, 306;—vows to capture, for Sītā, 311–12; Rāvana admonishes, 307–8;—asks, for aid, 13, 52, 303;—orders, to become golden deer, 303–4, 308;—orders, to obstruct sacrifices, 74;—rejects counsel of, 307–8;—recounts previous encounter with Rāma, 305–7;—tells, of killing of Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Triśiras, 303;—tells, plan to abduct Sītā, 303–4;—threatens, 308;—visits, 303; recalls past encounters with Rāma, 305–7; roams Daṇḍaka forest, 30; Samyodhakāntaka falls, 749; son of Tātakā, 78; strikes fear into all the world, 305; takes forms at will, 13, 330; Tātakā gives birth to, 78; transformed into rākṣasa by Agastya’s curse, 78

Mārīca Kaśyapa: husband of Diti 98, like Rāma, has every virtue of a son 132

Marici: ancestor of Rāma, 121–22; father of Kaśyapa, 121, 251, 280; one of the Prajāpati, 280; son of Brahma, 121, 251

Marici: a city in the western quarter, 402

maricīpas (class of ascetics), 268, 302, 303 marriage: Bhaga as lord of, 734; of Bharata to Māṇḍavī, 123–25; of Bhayā to Heti, 732; of Devavārni to Viśravas, 730; of Devavatī to Sukēsa, 733; fathers’ concerns about daughters’, 741, 746; of Kaikasi to Viśravas, 28; of Kaikasi, 741; of Kumabhakara to Vajravālā, 746–47; of Kumbhīnasi to Madhu by abduction, 764–65; of Lakṣmana to Urmilā, 123–25; maidens without, as a liability, 785; of Mandodari to Rāvana, 746; Narmadā (gandharvā woman) gives daughters in, 734; of Pārvatī to Śiva, 88; of Pulastya with Trṇābindu’s daughter, 730; of Rāma to Sītā, 11, 123–25;—recalled, 261; of Śatrughna to Śrutakirti, 123–25; of Śiva to Umā, 88; of sons of Daśaratha to daughters and nieces of Janaka, 11; of Śūrpaṇakhā to Viḍyujjihva, 746; Trṇābindu gives daughter to Pulastya in, 730; Vedavati’s hand sought in, 753; of Vībhīṣana to Saramā, 747

Mārtanda. See Sūrya

Māruta (god of wind): etymology of name of, 99; infatuation of, with Aṇjanā, 426; son of Aditi, 785. See also Vāyu

Mārutas, 99

Maruts, 76, 79, 95, 101, 133, 158, 248, 199, 316, 385, 389, 403, 423, 455, 456, 481,
INDEX • 905

493, 506, 534, 699, 724, 768, 770, 771, 772, 842, 854; Diti gives birth to, 99; etymology of name of, 99
Marutta: āsvamedha performed by, 837; mocks Rāvaṇa, 754; sacrifices to Śiva (Maheśvara), 744; Saṃvarta restrains from fighting Rāvaṇa, 754; sets out to battle Rāvaṇa, 754; story of, 754–55 māṣas (class of ascetics), 302, 303
Mātali (charioteer of Indra), 173; ascends with chariot to the sky, 702; brings Rāma Indra's chariots, 689;—Indra's javelin, 691; drives chariot for Indra, 770–72; drives Rāma into battle, 694; Gomukha son of, 770; Indra dismisses, 772; Rāma pays homage to, 702; Rāvaṇa riddles with arrows, 690; reminds Rāma that he must use Brahmacā’s divine weapon, 698; unfazed by arrow wounds, 697
Mataṅga (sage): asham of, 41, 363;—on Rṣyamūkha, 408;—blood drops fall on hermitage of, 363; curses Vālin, 363, 408; forest of, 348; Kabandha tells Rāma of, 347; Pampā as residence of students of, 347; pond of, 349
Mataṅga: daughter of Krodhavāśa, mother of the elephants, 280
Mātariśvan. See Vāyu
Mathurā. See Madhurā maxims. See proverbs
Māyā: immemorial consort of Rāma, 854
Maya (asura or dānava): architect of dānava, 412; asceticism of, 746; boon to, from 412; Brahmacā gives wealth of, to Hemā, 412; cave of, 418; creates forest and mansion of, Hemā, 412; forges javelin of Rāvaṇa, 686; gives Mandodarī to Rāvaṇa in marriage, 545, 746; gives infallible javelin to Rāvaṇa, 746; Hemā wife of, 746; Hemā’s relationship with, 412; Indra kills, 412; javelin of, gained through austerities, 746;—strikes down Lakṣmaṇa, 746; lord of dātya, 746; Māyāvin and Dunḍubhi sons of, 746; mountain stronghold of, 414; palace of, located on Maināka, 405; powers of illusion of, 327; unaware of Viśravas’s curse, 746
Māyāvin (1): son of Maya, 746
Māyāvin (2): son of Dunḍubhi, 360; Vālin fights, kills, in cave, 360–61
mead, 451
meat: Bharadvāja provides to Bharata’s army, 228–29; fit for sacrifice, 187, 812–13; Vasiṣṭha demands illusory, 812; in Rāvaṇa’s drinking hall, 451; Kumbhakarna eats, 610–11; Niśadās offer, to Bharata, 220; rākṣasa in the form of Vasiṣṭha demands, 812; rākṣasa women want to eat Sītā’s organs, 472;—addicted to, 462; Rāma eats, 791;—and Lakṣmaṇa eat, 187;—gives up, 152, 489;—takes, 313;—tells Guha that he subsists on fruits and roots, 182; Rāma, Sītā and Lakṣmaṇa eat, 187; Sāmpāti and his son seek, 372; vultures, seek, 420. See also cannibalism; flesh-eating
medicinal herbs. See healing herbs
Meghānā (birth name of Indrajīt), 747. See also Indrajīt
Meghnad Badh Kavya, “The Killing of Meghānā,” 32
Menā (daughter of Meru): daughter of Meru, 87; mother of Ganges and Pārvatī, 87; wife of Himalaya, 87
Menakā (apsaras): infatuates Viśvāmitra, 115
mendicants. See ascetic(s)
Meru (mountain), 133, 147, 173, passim; asham of Tṛapindu on slopes of, 729; deities resort to, 40; divine beings come to in evening, 403; Garuḍa heads toward, 644; Hanumān brags he can fly around one thousand times, 427; Hanumān swears by, 489; Menā daughter of, 87; monkeys are to search, 402; sons of Sukeṣa perform austerities on, 733
Merusāvarṇi (sage): asceticism of, 403; Svaṇyamabhā daughter of, 412
metaphor, extended (sama stavasturipaṇaka), 214, 288, 441, 601–2, 650, 683 776; of aśokavana as ravaged woman, 456–57; of battle as an ocean, 595; of battlefield as a river, 601–2, 771; of grief as an ocean, 595; of battlefield as a storm cloud, 448; Rāma, as refuge of the grief–stricken, 359
meter(s): anuṣṭubb type of, 8; of Mahābhārata, 8–9; of Rāmāyana, 8–9; śloka type of, 8, 55
minister(s): of Arjuna Kārtavirya, 775, 777–78; of Daśaratha, 60, 63, 64, 203–4, 724; Hanumān as, of Sūgriva, 27; of Rāma, 800, 820–21, 853;—consulted, 850–51; of Rāvaṇa 744, 749, 751, 752, 758, 761, 765, 769, 776, 778, 818–22;—bathe in Narmadā, 776;—eat ministers of Arjuna Kārtavirya, 778;—Hanumān fights and kills sons of, 501–2; of Romapāda, 61–62; Tāra as, of Vālin, 731; of Vībhīṣaṇa, 573
Miśrakeśa (gandharva woman), 227
Mithi: etymology of, 805. See also Janaka

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
Mithāḷa (city): besieged by angry kings, 118; Janaka returns to, 125; kings assemble in, 118; lord of (see Janaka); Rāma accompanies Viśvāmitra to, 10–11, 100, 102; Sudhanvan lays siege to, 123; Yudhājīvī arrives in, 124

Mitra: curses Uruvāsi to marry Purūravas, 804; story of Uruvāsi and, and Varuṇa, 803–4; Vasiṣṭha enters semen of, and Varuṇa, 803

Mitrashāṇa Saūḍāsa (Kalmāśapāda): boon of, 813; kills one of two rākṣasas, 812; sacrifice of, 812; Vālmiki tells story of, 812–13; Vasiṣṭha curses, to eat human flesh, 813;—purahota of, 812–13

Mlecchas: northern quarter is country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107

monkey army: Akampaṇa battles, 597; Aṅgada exhorts, 410, 423–24; Aṅgada exhorts, to fast to death, 414; assails Dadhimukha, 526–28; attacks Kumbhakarna, 623; attacks rākṣasas fleeing fire, 646; attempts to revive Rāma, 658; battles Akampaṇa’s forces, 601; battles rākṣasas’ army, 580–81, 582–83, 595, 597, 647, 651–52, 657, 662, 668, 675, 679–80; bites and claws Kumbhakarna, 623–24; burns Laṅkā, 454–6; cheers Hanumān’s return with herbs, 645; crosses the ocean on bridge, 555; despair of, at prospect of crossing the ocean, 543; flees 656–57; flees at sight of Kumbhakarna, 613, 621–23; flees in dejection at apparent killing of Śītā, 556; flees in fear of Atikāya, 635–36;—of Makarākṣa, 652;—of Narāṇān, 632;—of Rāvana, 683;—of Vibhīṣaṇa, 590–91; flees to Rāma for refuge from Kumbhakarna, 624, 626–27; flighty nature of, 450, 490, 515, 722; healed by herbs, 645; Jāmbavān rallies fleeing, 591; lays siege to Laṅkā, 577–79; leaders of, debate Vibhīṣaṇa’s intentions, 549–51;—showered with gifts, 726; marches toward south, 540–42; mourns Rāma and Laṅkāmaṇa, 585; Nala and, build bridge to Laṅkā, 15, 554–55; night battle between rākṣasa army and, 582–83; placement of, 573; plans to rescue Śītā, 525–26; protects Rāma and Laṅkāmaṇa, 586–87; Rāma dispatches, to find Indrajit, 584;—meets with leaders of, on Mount Suvela, 574–76;—positions leaders of, to attack, 577–78; Rāvana scorches, with Tāmasa weapon-spell, 683; rejoices at death of Indrajit, 671; rejoices at revival of Rāma and Laṅkāmaṇa, 593; reports on Śītā’s condition, 531–32; routes remaining rākṣasas, 699; scales the walls of Laṅkā, 580; seeks refuge with Rāma, 605; sets fire to Laṅkā, 645–46; slain warriors of, restored to life, 713; Sugrīva assembles, 385; Sugrīva commander of, 398; surveys Laṅkā from Suvela, 575; unable to extract javelin from Laṅkāmaṇa, 687; Vibhīṣaṇa raillies, 586, 590; weapons of, 525

monkeys: announce arrival of Laṅkāmaṇa, 388; arrive at Madhuvana, 526; assemble in Kiṃśkhāṇā, 393, 397–98; behavior of, 450, 518; birth of, 70–71, 854; board the Puṣpaka flying palace, 715; bring water for consecration, 725; as comic figures, 24; Dadhimukha tries to restrain, 526; delighted at Hanumān’s return, 518; devastate Madhuvana, 525–28; in dreams as inauspicious omens, 481, 483; drink honey-wine, 526–28; drunken behavior of, 526–27; eating of prohibited, 370; except Hanumān, accompany Rāma to heaven, 852–53; failure of search, for Śītā of, 408–409; fasting to death of, 416, 417, 418, 454; fear Rāma, 373; gods take birth as, 70–71; grief of, 379, 428, 454, 486, 789; Hanumān encourages, to drink honey-wine, 527; invade the Madhuvana with permission of Aṅgada and senior, 526; number of, 385, 393, 580; praise Hanumān, 518; return to divine source, 855; return to Prasravana, 408; revile Dadhimukha, 526–27; search for Śītā, 408–23; seek protection of Viśvāmaṇ, 377; of southern search party, 411; Sugrīva dispatches, to search for Śītā, 13, 402–7;—orders Nila to muster, 13, 385;—orders Hanumān to summon, 394;—summons, to Kiṃśkhāṇā, 394–95; summoned to aśvamedha, 838; Suṣeṇa as physician of, 27; Savyamprabha questions, 412; take on forms at will, 373, 560, 788, 852, 853; Tārā as protector of, 375; translation of words for, 46; vedic gods incarncate as, 10; void honey wine as urine, 529–30; wish to attend Rāma’s consecration, 715; with Sugrīva at Pampā and Rāyamūkā, 345, 346, 347, 349; witness Śītā’s abduction, 326–27

monkey women: grief of, 368, 454

morning rites, 284

mountain(s): Candra and Droṇa in the sea of milk, 592; fear Indra, 431; gods terrified of, 433; had wings in Kṛṣṇa Yuga, 433; Indra severed wings of, 433; lifting of, by Rāvana, 30, 752; of healing herbs (see healing herbs: mountain of)

Mount Ajañana. See Ajañana

Mount Aruna. See Aruna
Mount Citrakūṭa. See Citrakūṭa
Mount Dardara. See Dardara
Mount Dhūmra. See Dhūmra
Mount Himalaya. See Himalayas
Mount Kailāśa. See Kailāśa
Mount Mahendra. See Mahendra
Mount Mālāyāvān (Prasravaṇa). See Mālāyāvān; Prasravaṇa
Mount Mandara. See Mandara
Mount Meru. See Meru
Mount Prasravaṇa. See Mālāyāvān; Prasravaṇa
Mount Rṣyaṁukā. See Rṣyaṁukā
Mount Suveḷa. See Suveḷa
Mount Vindhya. See Vindhya
Mṛtyu (god of death), 246, 298, 318, passim; accompanies Yama in battle against Rāvaṇa, 759–60; asks to kill Rāvaṇa, 759; cannot be withstood, 338; destroys entire triple world. 759; noose of, 285, 290, 293, 297, 737; war hammer of, 759; Rāvaṇa fights, 759–60; vows to kill asuras, 759. See also Dharmarāja; Kāla; Kṛṭāṇa; Vaivasvata; Yama
Nahuṣa, 200, 252; father of Yayāti, 122, 136, 805–86; Rāma equal to, 218; son of Ambariṣa, 122, 252, 339
Naimiśa forest, 838
Nala (architect of the monkeys), 15, 27, 390, 540, 560, 564, 576, 580, 587, 597, 614, 683, 787–88; Aṅgada exhorts to return to battle, 621; arrival of, in Kī-sdkhūḍa, 365; arrows of Indrajit strike and fells, 642–43; charges Rāvaṇa, 605; equal in skill to his father, 554; fights Pratapana, 581; and monkeys build bridge, 15, 27, 53, 56, 554–55—recalled, 716–17, 721; number of troops of, 397, 558–60; participates in Sugriva's consecration, 380; Rāma has, build bridge, 53; son of Viśvakarman, 554; takes counsel with other monkeys, 573; Viśvakarman grants boon to, 554
Nalakūbara (son of Kubera): confirms Rambha's story, 767; curses Rāvaṇa, 767–68
Nandana (divine weapon-spell) of the vidyādhara, 80
Nandana (minister of Daśaratha), 204
Nandana garden (Indra's garden), 228–29, 236, 299, 311, 347, 384, 458, 478, 498, 526, 575, 742–43, 747, 772, 790; Kubera revived in, 751; Rāvaṇa destroys, 748–49
Nandī(ṇ). See Nandīśvara
Nandigrāma: Bharata lives in, 52, 54, 56, 257–58, 721, 809; Hanumān reaches, 718
Nandīśvara, 283: curses Rāvaṇa, 16, 24, 751–5; orders Puṣpaka turned back, 752
Nārada (divine seer): alerts Nṛga to danger facing him, 801; entertains Bharata, 228; goes to heaven with Vaivasvata, 760; Kauśalyā invokes, 158; narrates history of Rāma to Vālmiki, 9–10, 18, 38–39, 51–55; praises Rāvaṇa's valor in battle, 756; returns to heaven with Viivasvata, 760; warns Rāvaṇa about following Yama's path, 756–57; warns Yama of Rāvaṇa's intentions, 757–58
Nārada (king of gandharvas), 228
Nārada (minister of Daśaratha): describes practices of social classes in yugas, 821–22; explains untimely death of child, 18, 821, reasons that a śīdra is practicing asceticism in Rāma's realm, 821–22
Naraka (dūdana): lives in Prāgyotitśa, 403; son of Kalākā, 280; Viṣṇu kills, 629, 759, 768
Narāntaka (rākṣasa troop leader), 601, 604; Aṅgada fights and kills, 632–33; death of, recalled, 635, 668, 715; flesh marks path of, 632; knocks Aṅgada unconscious, 633; Kumbhakarṇa paternal uncle of, 628; leads rākṣasas into battle, 629–30, 632
Narasimhāvatāra (Man–lion), 30
Nārāyaṇa. See Viṣṇu
Narmadā (gandharva woman): gives daughters in marriage, 734
Narmadā (river), 400, 559, 778; Arjuna Kārtavīrya blocks flow of, 777;—sports in, 775; Rāvaṇa and ministers bathe in, 776
Necklace. See gold necklace; pearl necklace(s)
Nectar of immortality, 159, 233, 302, 346, 427, 592, 721; churned from ocean of milk, 98, 418, 761; Garuḍa seeks and steals, 303; gods and demons desire to obtain, 97; gods and asuras churn ocean for, 97–98, 418, 469, 620, 757, 781, 790; gods gain, 134, 339; Mainda and Divvīda drink, 525, 560; produced from sacrifice, 395; Rāvaṇa threatens to churn ocean for, 757; Sītā tells Rāvaṇa that he could not survive assaulting her even should he drink, 319. See also ocean: churning of Nīkumbha (rākṣasa warrior): Nila fights and kills, 581–82
Nīkumbha Kumbhakarṇa (son of Kumbhakarna), 647; Hanumān fights and kills, 651; minister of Rāvaṇa, 509, 546–47, 769
Nīkumbhilā (goddess), 472; Indrajit performs sacrifices at shrine of, 641, 657, 660–62
Nila (monkey troop leader), 365, 390, 397, passim; appointed as scout for army, 540; confronts Praḥasta at eastern gate, 573; created by gods, 787; fights Atikāya,
Nila (monkey troop leader) (continued) 637; fights Indrajit, 641; fights and kills Mahodara, 634; Indrajit strikes down, 643; Nikumbha, 581–82;—Prahasha, 602–3;—Prahasha, recalled, 721; general of Rāma's army, 502, 540–41, 561, 577, 614; of one hundred thousand troop leaders, 557; guards eastern gate, 573; Kaikyē embraces, 722; has army camp, 543; hurls mountaintop at Kumbhakarna, 624; kills Mahodara (2), 634; member of southern search party, 400; number of troops of, 397; one of “five tigers among monkeys,” who rushes Kumbhakarna, 623; one of four monkeys who can leap to Lañkā, 438; Pāvaki as patronymic of, 614; perches on Rāvaṇa's battle standard, 606–7; pulls out arrow in Vālin, 377; Rāma gives gifts to, 742; Rāma orders, to scout way for army, 540; Rāvaṇa attacks and falls, 606–7; son of Agni, 400, 603; scouts way for army, 541; Sugrīva orders, to assemble monkey army, 385; stationed at eastern gate, 573, 577, surrounded by one hundred million troops, 560, Trīśiras immobilizes, 634

Nīma (出生 of, 804; boon of, 805; brahman's churn body of, 805; curses Vasiṣṭha, 803; founder of Janaka's lineage,122; founds Vaijayanta, 802; Gautama performs sacrifice for, 802; son of Iksvāku, 802; son of, called Mithi, Janaka, and Vaideha, 805; story of, 802–5; Vasiṣṭha curses, to become disembodied, 803

Nīśāda (hunter), kills sārasa crane (krauṇca), 9, 54–55; Vālmīki curses, 9, 54

Nīśāda(s) (forest tribe), Guha, king of, 56, 182, 186, 220–21, 223–24, 717; boat of, 795; ferry Bharata and his army across the Ganges, 224–25; Garuda lays waste to realm of, 303; offer hospitality and provisions to Bharata, 220; Rāma recalls help of, 795; Viśvāmitra curses Mahodaya to become, 111

Nīśākara (ascetic), ashram of, 421; boon to from, 421; foretells abduction of Sītā by, 422; foretells new wings for Śampāti, 422; grants boon to Śampāti 421; Śampāti tells story of meeting with, 420–22

Niśāśstra (statecraft), discourse of Kumbhakarna on, to Rāvaṇa, 31; Rāma questions Bharata about his conduct of, 238–41; Rāmāyaṇa as, 5; text on kingship and governance, 5

Nivātakavacas (class of dātīyas), alliance of, with Rāvaṇa, 760–61; boon of, 760 noose(s) (pāśa[s]): of Brahmā, 108; of Dharma, 80; of Kāla, 73, 80, 108, 111, 285, 292, 298, 321, 323, 326, 512, 548, 574, 590, 664, 750, 846; of Mṛtyu, 285, 290, 293, 297, 737, 759; of Varuṇa, 80, 108, 403, 456, 786; of Yama, 295, 297, 307, 624, 637

Nīla (monkey troop leader) (continued) northern quarter: description of, 404–6; dispatching of search party to, 407 northern search party: dispatching of, to northern quarter, 407; failure of, to find Sītā, 409; Śatabali as leader of, 404, 407

Nṛga: brahman's curse, to become a lizard, 801–2; burrows of, 801–2; consecrates Vasu, 801; gives cows to brahman's, 800; Nārada and Pārvata alert, to danger facing him, 801; purohita of, not named, 801; story of, and brahman's, 800–802; Vāsudeva liberates from curse, 801

number: of apes, 387, 393, 580; of langurs, 393; of monkeys, 385, 393, 580; of rākṣasa troops, 392, 513; of troops of monkeys, 397–98

oath: spoken word as, 387; swearing of, of Bharata, by Rāma's feet, 291;—of Bharata, by truth, 851;—of Daśaratha, 143, 248, 711;—of Daśaratha by acquired merit, 143;—of Daśaratha to exile Rāma, 142;—of Hanumān, 497;—Hanumān on mountains and fruits and roots, 489;—of Hanumān on truth, 534;—of Lakṣmana, 156, 795;—of Lakṣmana, on truth, 183; of—of Lakṣmana on truth and bow, 153; of Rāma, on arms and life, 794;—of Rāma, on truth, 358;—of Rāvaṇa, 572, 742;—of Sītā, on truth, 494;—of Sītā on virtue, 707 (see also Sītā: truth-act of);—of Sugrīva, 25, 387;—of Sugrīva, on truth, 359; of—of Sugrīva on Vālin's feet, 360; of townspeople, on sons, 181. See also truth-act; vow

ocean: agitated by battle between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 697; churning of, 97–98, 418, 469, 620, 757, 781, 790; (see also ocean of milk: churning of); description of, 543; difficulty in crossing, 537; digging of, 91–93, 96; god of (see Śāgara; Varuṇa); leap of, by Hanumān, 14, 53, 56, 427–37, 516–18; leap of, discussion of, 423–25; monkey army crosses, 555; monkey army reaches southern shore of, 542; Nala and monkeys build bridge across, 554–55; Rāma asks Viḥiṣaṇa how to cross 552–53;—proposes building bridge to cross, 538;—encamps
on shore of, 543–44, 568;—and Sugriva deliberate crossing, 542–43
ocean of milk: churning of, 97–98; healing herbs located near, 591; in eastern quarter, 398–99; locus of Candra and Drona, 592; monkeys live on shore of, 394; nectar of immortality churned from (see nectar of immortality); supreme seers drink foam of, 761
Odyssey, 3
offerings: to ancestors, 87, 105, 250, 251, 283, 349, 845; to guest. See also guest-offering(s)
old age: Yayāti exchanges, with son Pūrṇa, 805–7
Old Avadhi, 43
Old Testament, 37
omen(s): Laksmaṇa observes, 576; presage Rāma's victory and Rāvaṇa's defeat, 695; rākṣasas observe, 498; Rāma observes, 330–33, 576, 695; Rāma skilled in reading, 291, 695; Tārā reads 376. See also auspicious omen(s); inauspicious omens
omniscient vision of rṣi (seer), 4, 39
oral composition, 7
ordeal by fire (agniparikṣā): of Sītā, 15, 17, 708, 710–11;—Uttarakaṇḍa refers to, 793
ornament(s): 60, 69, 84, passim; of Agastya, accepts from Śveta;—gives to Rāma, 824;—made by Viśvakarman, 824;—Rāma accepts, 826; Anasūyā gives, to Sītā, 262; of Atikāya, 630; Daśaratha wants to give, to Sītā, 171; Garuḍa wears, 592; good conduct, of virtuous, 704; husband is a woman's finest, 461; of Kaikeyi, stripped off, 143; king of Kekeya gives to Bhurata, 206; of Kumbhakarna, 620; of Mārica, 313; of ministers of Rāvaṇa, 501; of monkeys, 724; of rākṣasas, 440–41; Rāma gives, to monkeys, 726;—orders Sītā tobe adorned with, 705;—orders Vibhīṣaṇa to give, to monkeys, 714;—rejects Vibhīṣaṇa's offer of, 713; of Rambhā, broken, 767; Rāvaṇa adorns sons with, before battle, 630; promises, to Sītā, 317, 471; Sampāti sees Sītā throwing, 418; Sītā emerges from fire adored with, 710; of Sītā broken, 337;—described, 324–27;—dropped, 357;—dropped, Jatayus sees, 418;—dropped monkeys find, 485;—enflame Rāma's grief, 485;—lacking of, 459, 462–64;—wears, 418, 460;—wishes to give, to sages' wives, 794–95; Sugriva shows, to Rāma, 357; of Vāyu, 785; of women of Rāvaṇa's inner apartments, 442–44, 446–48, 464, 466, 521. See also hair ornament; gold necklace; jewel; jewelry; pearl necklace(s); signet ring
ospreys, 346, 386, 413, third path in sky, that of, 419; women shriek like, 700
Oṣṭhakarṇakas (name of a people), 399
Padmā (goddess), 853
Padma (guardian elephant [diggaja]), 776. See also Mahāpadma
Padma (presiding deity of Kubera's treasury), 750–51
padma (type of mansion), 440
padma(ka) (type of sandalwood), 390, 402, 418
padma(ka) (type of tree), 394, 404, 516
Pahlavas: destroy Viśvāmitra's army, 106; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 106–107; Viśvāmitra's army destroys, 106 palace of Rāvaṇa: description of, 443–46; Puṣpaka (flying palace) as, 445–46. See also Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāna)
Pampā (lake), 13, 53, 56, 72, 354–55, 717; description of, 346–47, 349–52; Rāma and Laksmaṇa arrive at, 351; as residence of Sugriva and monkeys, 345–46, 347, 349, 350; Rśyamukha located east of, 347
Pampā (pond), 346, 716
Pampā (river), 269
Panasa (monkey troop leader), 525, 540–41, 574; advises Rāma about Vibhīṣaṇa, 573; Aṅgada exhots to fight, 622; arrives in Kṣiṃhndh, 397; cut through with a sword, 565; dwells on Mount Pārīyātra, 558; struck down in battle, 643; Śuṣena sends to ocean of milk for healing herbs, 592
panasa (tree or fruit), 227, 323, 276, 281, 346, 565
Paṅcājana: Viśṇu kills, on Mount Caravān, 403
Paṅcājanya (conch [śaikha] of Viṣṇu), 737
Paṅcāṭparsas (Pond of the Five Apasaras): etymology of name of, 247; story of, 274
Paṅcavatī (forest), 12–13, 281; Agastya directs Rāma to, 279; description of, 281–82; Rāma dwells in, with Sītā and Laksmaṇa in, 12, 281
Paṇḍavas: devious behavior of, 38
Paṇḍyas (region), 400–401
panegyrists (band), 35, 137, 146, 159, 201, 224, 395, 722
parasol. See umbrella
Parāsūrāma. See Rāma Jāmadagnya
parāyana (recitation). See Vālmiki Rāma-yana: recitation of
Pārīyātra (mountain), 403, 500, 558
Parjanya (god of rain), 295, 495, 559, 727, 845
Pārvatā, 750
Parvata (divine seer): alerts Nṛga to danger facing him, 801
Pārvatī (Umā). 95; austerities of, 87–88; curses gods and the Earth 88–89; daughter of Himalaya, 87–88; grants boons to Sukeśa, 732–33; helps Śiva retain semen, 88; left eye of Kubera burned by gazing at, 748; offers Ila half a boon, 834; Śiva and, grant Sukeśa boons, 732–33; Śiva as lord of, 736; Śiva marries, 88; Śiva turns himself into a woman to delight, 833; story of Śiva and, and Ila/Ilā, 833–34
Passion Play, 6
past lives. See birth(s): reaping consequences of previous
Paśupati. See Śiva
Pātāla (underworld), 346, 370, 407–8, 436, 543, 610–11, 843; asuras inhabit, 432; dānavas inhabit, 423, 554, 577, 697, 843; Kauśikī rescued from, 494; rākṣasas enter, 740; Rāma demands Sītā be brought back from, 843. See also Raṣātāla
path(s): of ancestors, 131, 246; of crows as second in sky, 419; of falcons as fourth in sky, 419; Ganges goes by three, 76, 87–88, 96–97, 182, 186, 716; of kites as third in sky, 419; of kruatīcas as third in sky, 419; of kulīṅgas as first in sky, 419; of sons of Vinātā as highest in sky, of hāṃsas as sixth in sky, 419; of ospreys as third in sky, 419; of vultures as fifth in sky, 419
pativrata (ideal wife), 5, 22, 24. See also ideal wife
Paulastya(s), lineage of, 74; House of, 299; patronymic of Indrajit, 655, 664;—of Rāvana (Daśāṅgava), 321, 463, 470, 612, 614, 672, 746, 752–53;—of Trīśiras/Trimūrdhan, 633;—of Vībhīṣana, 743;—of Viśravas, 730, 741, 746; Rāma kills, 740
Paulastya-vadadhā (Slaying of Paulastya): alternative name of Rāmāyaṇa, 3, 57
Paulomi. See Śacī
paunḍarika (sacrifice): of Rāma, 726
Pauravas (region): searched by northern search party, 404
Pauravas (vedic clan); associated with the Mahābhārata, 35
Pavana. See Vāyu
peacock: Indra grants boon to, 754–55
pearl necklace(s): Indra has Vāyu give Rāma, 725; of Kaikeyī, 142; of Sītā, 325; Rāma gives Hanumān, 789; Rāma gives Sītā, 726; of Rāvana’s women, 447, 451; of Sītā falls during abduction, 325; Sītā gives Hanumān, 726; Vidyādhara women wear, 430
performance, of Rāmāyaṇa. See Vāmiki Rāmāyaṇa: recitation of phalaśruti (fruitful hearing): benefit of hearing Rāmāyaṇa, 9
Plakṣa (monkey): announces Laksmana’s arrival, 389
plakṣa (tree), 67, 346
poem (kāvya): Rāmāyaṇa as first (ādikāvya), 4; uniqueness of Rāmāyaṇa as, 3–4; Uttarakāṇḍa identified as, 844; Vāmiki-rāmāyaṇa self identifies as, 55–57, 818, 839–40, 844. See also poetry; Vāmiki Rāmāyaṇa
poet(s) (kavīs): Vāmiki as first (ādikāvī), 4; Vāmiki and Vyāsa as historian-; 39–40 poetry (kāvya or śloka): Rāmāyaṇa as, 3, 4; Vāmiki creates, 9, 54–55;—renders Rāmāyaṇa story into, 57. See also poem; Vāmiki Rāmāyaṇa
poison, 197, 283, 301, passim; Devayānī threatens suicide by, 806; drinking kālakūṭa as a means of suicide, 318; drinking of, 323, 326, 473, 750;—as a means of feticide, 252;—as a means of suicide, 150, 454; food consisting of, 511; herbs counteract, 430; in food, 224, 228; monkeys threaten suicide by, 454;—warned about fruit and water mixed with, 540; murder by, 474; Sagara (sa-gara) born with, 122, 252; Sītā threatens suicide by, 163–64, 314, 477–78; women of Ayodhya, threaten suicide by, 181
politics: gendering of, in Ayodhyākāṇḍa, 12 popular saying. See proverbs: “no such thing as untimely death,” 477
porcupine: eating of, by brahmans and kshatriyas, 370
porridge, 212, 229; Daśaratha apportions, to wives, 69–70; emerges from sacrificial fire, 69
portents. See auspicious omen(s); inauspicious omens; omen(s)
power(s) of illusion (māyā): of ascetics (see ascetic power); Kāla created by, 849; of Indrajit, 588–89, 592, 641, 655–56, 661–62, 673, 729, 772; of Indrajit called tāmasi, 764; of Mārica, 325–26; of Mārica and Subāhu, 83–84; of Maya, 327; of rākṣasas, 630, 751; of Rāma, 700; of Rāvana, 341, 545–46, 685, 693, 696, 751, 76; Rāvana’s chariot fashioned through, 320; Rāvana’s weapons infused with, 696; Śiva (Paśupati) gives to Indrajit, 764; of Tātākā, 79; of Vidyujjihva, 564; of Viśṇu as yogic, 82
Prabhāva (monkey): announces arrival of Lakṣmana, 389, 577
Prācetas: Vālmiki as, 840
Prthagasa (field marshal of Rāvana): Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3; son of Sumālin, 734
Prthagasa (minister of Viḥiśāṇa), 573
Prthagasa (monkey hero), 577
Prthagasa (rākṣasa): Sugrīva fights and kills, 581
Praghāsā (rākṣasa woman), 472
Prāgyijotisa (city): dānava Naraṇa lives on, 403; located on Varāha mountain, 403
Prahasta (minister of Rāvana), 729, 732, 744, 745–50, 769, 776–78; Arjuna Kārtavīrya falls in battle, 778; encourages Rāvana to fight Kubera, 744; Rāvana sends as messenger to Kubera, 744–46; son of Sumālin, 734
Prahasta (rākṣasa general), 509–10, 567, 603, 610, 629, 668, 678, 715, 728, 729, 732; battles monkey army, 601–2; believes returning Sītā, is only way to avoid war, 599; inauspicious omens presage defeat of, 600; interrogates Hanumān, 509–10; Nila fights and kills, 602, 721; Rāvana claims, killed Rāma, 565–66;—dispatches to battle, 599–600;—stations at eastern gate, 572–73; son of Jambumālin, 500; vows to fight for Rāvana, 546
Praheti (rākṣasa, brother of Heti), 732
Prahīḍa/Prahrīḍa (asura devotee of Viṣṇu), 30, 649
Prajāgha (rākṣasa): fights Sampāti (monkey), 581
Prajāpati. See Brahmā
Prajāpatis (lords of creatures): Brahmā fourth of six, 470; Jaṭāyus names, 280; Vivavant first among, 251
Pramāthin (monkey troop leader), 559, 577
Pramāthin (rākṣasa warrior): Rāma fights and kills, 291, 293
Prasravaṇa (mountain), 298, 336; monkeys return to, without Sītā, 408–9; Rāma lives on, 381; Sītā implores, for aid, 320; Sugrīva and Rāma meet on, 395–96. See also Mālyavān (mountain)
Prathalas: northern quarter location of country of, 404
Pratapana (rākṣasa): battles Nala, 581
Pratardana (ally of Rāma): Rāma embraces and dismisses, 787
Pratiṣṭhāna (city): founded by Ila, 837; inherited by Purūravas, 837
Prativāsudeva, 36
Prāṇḍūrapada (month), 383
Prayāga (confluence), 225, 228; Rāma’s visit to, 188–90
Preceptor: of the Taittirīyas, 166; Śukra, of demons, 415, 715. See also purohit(a(s)
pregnancy: gaze of Pulastya causes, 729; of Śālakaṭāṅkaṭā, 732; Sītā, 17, 796; of Trāṇabindu’s daughter, 729; of wives of Asita, 252; Rāma observes signs of, in Sītā, 791
prenuptial promise: Daśaratha breaks, 23
preservation: of bodies of Nimi, 804;—in vat of oil, 202, 822. See also corpse(s): preservation of, of Nimi
previous lives. See birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation
proclaim: name when entering battle, 326, 500, 579, 635, 760, 762
prologue (upodghāta) of Rāmāyaṇa, 4, 6, 9–10, 39, 51–58
protection of ascetics. See ascetic(s): protection of, as duty of kings
proverbs, 197, 241, 246–47, 415, 499, 800; “cheerfulness, perseverance, and mental fortitude produce success in an undertaking,” 410; “It is impossible for a man or a woman to die before the appointed time,” 473; “giving away of something that has been given brings great benefits,” 824; “grief diminishes with the passage of time,” 543; “Joy will eventually come to a person who lives, even if it takes a hundred years,” 482, 719; “kshatriya has no real power,” 106; “living in forest is nectar of immortality,” 233; “men take after their mothers not their fathers,” 283; “no such thing as untimely death,” 477; “in this world a man’s destiny inevitably follows him,” 416; “When a husband dies first, they say it is because of the wife’s lack of virtue,” 566
Prithvī (goddess of earth). 177. See also Dharani; Mādhavi; Vasudā
Pulastya (brahman-seer), 837; ashram of, 729–30; curse of, on girls, 729; descendants of, 289–90; distracted by young girls, 729; gase of causes pregnancy, 729; marries Trāṇabindu’s daughter, 730; one of the mind-born sons of Brahmā, 470; one of the Prajāpatis, 280, 470; rākṣasas spring from lineage of, 732; requests Arjuna Kārtavīrya to release Rāvana, 779–80; son of Brahmā, 729, 780; Trāṇabindu recognizes curse of, 730; Viśravas son of, 28, 730, 741
Pulindas: northern quarter location of country of, 404
Pūru: birth of, 805; rules in Pratiṣṭhāna, 807; son of Śarmiṣṭhā, 805; son of Yayāti, 805–7; Yayāti consecrates, 807; Yayāti exchanges old age with, 805–7

Purūravas: birth of, 836; inherits Pratiṣṭhāna, 837; king of Kāśi, 804; name of a king, 755; son of Ilā and Budha, 836; Urvāśi and, 319

Pūṣan (name of a god or one of the Ādityas), 158

Pūṣkara (forest and lake), 113–15, 800; Viśvāmitra performs austerities at, 114

Pūṣkara (son of Bharata): established as king in Pūṣkāravatī, 846–47

Pūṣkara (unidentified figure): fights Rāvana, 761; goes forth with Go, 761

Pūṣkāravatī: Bharata founds, 846–47

Pūṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāṇa), 18, 31, 121, passim; as abode of divinity, 758; attends Rāma, 822; Brahmā gives, to Kubera, 731; brought to a halt in the sky, 751; comes to and serves Rāma, 789–90; departs for the abode of Kubera, 723; description of, 445–46, 714; does not carry a widow, 589; flies wherever one desires, 318, 714, 751; Hanumān searches, 445–46, 451; Kubera owns, 299, 318, 329, 731; Kumbhakarṇa sees Rāvaṇa in, 615; Nandi-śvara orders, turned back, 752; Rāma dismisses, 790;—reaches Kīśkīndhā in, 721;—returns to Nandigrāma in, 15, 53–54, 56, 714–16, 721–22;—searches for Śambūka in, 18, 822–23;—visits Agastyā’s ashram in, 823–24, 829; Rāvana conquers realms from, 756–81;—falls from, 476;—offers Sītā to use, 329;—roams earth in, 754;—seated in, 615;—sees Kubera in, 742;—steals, from Kubera, 299, 329, 699, 713, 751; Sītā observes battlefield from, 587–89; Sugrīva and his army board, 715; Sumālin sees Kubera in, 740; Trijātī forces Sītā into, 587;—turns around, 589; Viśiṣṭaṇā lends, to Rāma, 31, 56, 713–14; Viśvakarman creates, for Brahmā, 446; yoked to hamśas, 825

Puṣya (chariot), 160

Puṣya (constellation, asterism), 132, 134–35, 138, 140, 146, 159, 282, 721

Put (a hell), 249

queens of Ayodhyā. See Kaikeyi; Kausalyā; Sūmitrā

Qur’an, 3

rabbit: eating of by brahmans and kshatriyas, 370

Rāghava. See Laksmana; Rāma
Rāvaṇa as lord of, 745–46; culture of, stands in opposition to that of Aryan, 28; description of, 440–42; each returns to own divine source, 855; engage in religious observances, 440, 443; etymology of word, 732; exotic food of, 451; flee to 731, 740, 744, 817; flesh-eating (see flesh-eating: by rākṣasas); funeral practices of (see Kabandha; Rāvaṇa: funerary rites of; Virādhā: burial of); genealogy of, 16, 732–35; grief of mothers of slain, 501; Hanumān battles, 499–506, 513–14;—recalled, 782–83; in guise of cook offers Vasiṣṭha human flesh, 813; in guise of Vasiṣṭha, asks Mitrāsaha for meat, 812; inauspicious omens presage destruction of (see inauspicious omens); intoxication of, 441; Khara dispatches fourteen, to attack Rāma, 286–87;—dispatches fourteen thousand, 289; kill ascetics, 269; live in Pātāla, 740 (see also Pātāla); live in 731, 744 (see also Rasātāla); Mārīca foretells destruction of, 306, 309; night battle between monkeys and, 582–83; number of, in Lāṅkā, 392, 539; parodies of āryan civilization, 27–28; perform sacrifices, 440, 443; power of illusion of, 83, 630, 751; Rāma battles and kills fourteen, 12, 287;—battles and kills fourteen thousand, 52, 291–94;—battles and kills fourteen thousand recalled, 300–301, 303, 326, 460, 474, 490, 652, 677, 720;—six, 583; Rāvaṇa dispatches eight, to Janasthāna, 327–28;—dispatches fourteen thousand, to Janasthāna, 763–64; Rāvaṇa stations, to defend Lāṅkā, 572; re-occupy Lāṅkā, 745–46; revival of Rāma and Lāṅkāsma dismays, 593–94; secret police of, 440; set fire to Hanumān’s tail, 513; sound of monkey army demoralizes, 570; take on form at will, 392, 812; two lineages of, 740; Usānas Kāvyā as purohīta of, 599; Viṣṇu takes birth to slaughter, 740;—vows to kill, 736; weapons of, 440–41, 443, 500; worship Viṣṇu, 854; yākṣas and, Brahmā, creates, 732

rākṣasa wordresses: description of, 462, 469; eaters of humans, 330, 462, 472, 475, 521; Hanumān asks Sītā for permission to kill, 704;—terrorizes, 498–99; intoxication of, 462, 472; menace Sītā, 330, 471–72, 477; Rāvaṇa orders, to guard Sītā, 330, 327; report Hanumān to Rāvaṇa, 499; show Sītā battlefield in Puspa, 587; Sītā defies, 471, 473–74;—tells Saramā that, menace her, 569;—tells Hanumān not to punish, 704; tell Sītā of Hanumān’s punishment,

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
rākṣasa wardresses (continued)
513; terrorizes Sītā in āsoka grove, 14, 33, 330, 470–72, 477;—recounted, 521; Trijātā rails at, for terrorizing Sītā, 476; worship Nikumbhā, 472
rākṣasa women: blame Śūraṇaḵhā, 676–77; characterization of, 32–34; foretell Rāvaṇa’s downfall, 678; grief of, 297, 676–78, 699–700; intoxication of, 442, 447–48. 463; lament of, for Rāvaṇa, 699–700; intoxication of, 56, 150;—through own intention, 849; bleeding to, Bharadvāja grants, 717;—gods grant, 53, 721, 833;—Indra grants, 712–13, 722; born in House of Ikṣvāku, 51, 329, 356; bow of, 585, 604–605, 626, 675–76, 683, 687, 689; Brahmatā and (see Brahmatā); brahman blames, for death of child, 18, 820; brahman of Ayodhyā address, 178–79; breaks Śiva’s bow, 11, 13, 119;—Virāṭha’s right arm, 266; brothers of, as “life breaths outside body of,” 793;—bound by oath to Rāma, 794; as Cakravartin (Universal Emperor), 35; calms Lakṣmaṇa, 235–36, 387–88; character synopsis of, 20–21; chariot battle of, with Rāvaṇa, 689–93, 695–98; closeness of Lakṣmaṇa and, 493–94; compared to Viṣṇu, 51, 609 (see also Rāma: as Supreme Being, Lord, Soul, or Spirit this entry); compassion of, 34, 131, 149, 167, 181, 186, 195–96, 258, 260, 337, 369, 392, 460, 474, 478, 493, 513–14, 534, 593;—for crow, 493; complaint of seers to, about rākṣasas, 258–59; confides in Lakṣmaṇa, 187–88; confrontation of, with Rāma Jámadagnya, 11, 56, 126–28; consecrates Aṅgada and Candraketu, 847;—Lava and Kuśa, 851–52; consecration of, 16, 725–26;—Ayodhyā readied for, 136–38;—ends some versions of Rāmāyaṇa, 19;—interrupted, 56, 150;—priests prepare for, 146–47; consoles Kusālyā, 157–58;—Vālin, 372; conversation with Niṣāda chief (Guha), 56, 183–84; cremates Jātāyuś, 342; crosses bridge to Laṅkā with army, 555;—Ganges (Mandākini), 56, 186–87; cuts off Kabandha’s right arm, 343; Daśaratha as foil for, 12, 23;—exiles Rāma, 11, 149–51;—spirit of, instructs, 711–12; death of rākṣasas in Janañāṭhaṇa by, recalled, 564, 700–701;—of rākṣasas in Laṅkā by, recalled, 728;—of Virāṭha by, recalled, 564, 677, 697, 716, 719; deeds of, praised sages, 728–29;—recalled, 717; defends Viṣṇavāmitra’s sacrifice, 10, 82–83; delineates crossing the ocean, 542–43; describes end of rainy season, 386;—hardships of the forest to Sītā, 161–62;—Pañcavaṭi, 281; description of, 51–52, 72, 130–31, 300–301, 354, 355, passim; description of body of, 133,
Rāma (Aṅkṣvāka, Dāsārathī, Kāktustha, Rāghava) (continued) 
297–98; kicks Dundubhi's skeleton, 53, 363; killing of Vālin by, as unjust, 370; kills Mārica, 13, 312–13—Rāvana, 15, 698;—kills Śāmbūka by beheading, 18–20, 41, 822–23;—Subāhū, 10, 83;—Tātākā, 10, 79;—Vālin by ambush, 13, 14, 25, 26, 368;—Virādha, 266–67; Kum-bhakarṇa decimates monkey army, 5, 31, 624; Lakṣmanā and, (see Lakṣmanā); Lakṣmanā as emotional foil for, 11, 22;—as second life breath of, 22, 72, 561;—builds hut for, 191, 282;—calms, 338–40;—consoles, 335, 381, 386, 658–60, 800; describes winter to, 282–83;—guards door for, 848;—urges, to proceed with the consecration, 156–57;—urges, to search for Sītā, 335, 338–39;—warns, about golden deer, 310;—warns, of arrival of Bharata's army, 234–36; lament of, for Sītā, 13, 333–35, 385, 543–44;—for Lakṣmanā, 589–90, 687–88; Lava and Kuśa (see Kuśa; Lava; Rāma: sons of, as disciples of Vālmiki this entry); Lavaṇa and (see Lavaṇa); learns of Daśaratha's death, 241; leaves Ayodhyā with Sītā and Lakṣmanā, 11, 172–74; lies wounded on bed of arrows, 585, 590–91; life span of, complete, 849; like madman from grief over Sītā, 334–35; lives with Lakṣmanā in cave during rainy season, 380–81; love for Sītā, 129; madness of, 13, 336–38, 843; Mālāvān counsels Rāvana to make peace with, 570–72; manliness of, 357–58; marches southward with army, 540–42; Mārica as golden deer lures, into forest, 13, 312–13;—cries for help in voice of, 13, 313;—praises, 304;—recalls previous encounter with, 305–7; marriage of, to Sītā, 11, 123–25; married life of, 791; matted locks (hair) of, 144, 150, 155, 186, 222, 238, 247, 265, 284, 719;—abandoned, 724; Māyā as immemorial consort of, 854; meets Jáyū, 279–81;—Surigrīva, 13, 356;—Surigrīva on Mount Prasaraṇa [Mālāvān], 395–96; ministers of, 800, 820–21, 853;—consulted, 850–51; monkey army leaders advise, on Vibhi-śaṇa, 549–51;—protects, and Lakṣmanā, 586–87; monkeys report Sītā's condition to, 531–32;—seek refuge with, 605, 624, 626, 636; as most central and compelling character in the epic, 20; mothers of, ascend to heaven, 845; mourns Daśaratha's death, 241–43; must rescue Sīta himself, 491, 495, 522, 535; Nārada describes practices of social classes in yugas, 821–22;—explains untimely death of child to, 18, 821;—narrates adventures of, to Vālmiki, 9, 51–54; not mentioned as incarnation of Viṣṇu in upodhāta, 9; as object of emulation, 20–21; observes Sītā's pregnancy, 791; offers to consecrate Lakṣmanā as prince regent, 726; as one of true vows, 850–51; orders Lakṣmanā to abandon Sītā, 794–97;—Sītā to be proven innocent publicly, 710;—Vibhi-śaṇa to bring Sītā, 705;—Vibhi-śaṇa to perform Rāvana's funerary rites, 30, 701–2; people of Ayodhyā lament exile of, 166–67, 173–75, 180–81; poetic fame deserved by, 844;—posts troops at gates of Lāṅkā, 573–74; power of illusion of, 700; Pratardana as ally of, 787; prepares for siege, 540, 576;—to leave for forest, 165–75;—troop leaders to attack Lāṅkā, 577–78; purohitas of (see purohitas); of Rāma); Puṣpaka and, 722, 789–90, 822 (see also Puṣpa/Puṣpaka[vimāna]); questions Vibhi-śaṇa about Kumbhakarṇa, 613; rage of, at loss of Sītā, 336–38, 843–44; rages against earth goddess (Vasudhā), 843–44; Raghu as ancestor of, 36; Rāvana and (see also Rāvana); Rāvana hears of death of Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Triśisras by, 300;—reviles, 303, 466, 469;—vows to destroy, by abducting Sītā, 13, 303–4; Rāvana's appearance impresses, 604; reaches Lāṅkā, 577; rebukes Lakṣmanā, 331–33; recognizes Lava and Kuśa as his sons and Sītā's sons, 10, 19, 841; as refuge of all, 214, 338, 549, 552, 605, 613, 636, 675, 830, 854; refuses to enter Kiṣkindhā, 379–80; regards world as empty, 844; rejects Sītā as unfaithful, 707; releases Rāvana's spies, 556, 563; reminds Kausalyā of wifely duty, 24, 157–58; removes and breaks Rāvana's javelin, 687; repudiates and rejects Sītā, 15, 706–707; rescues Sītā from Virādha, 267; residence of, on Mount Prasaraṇa (Mālāvān), 381; resumes trappings of royalty, 723–24; reunion of, with queen mothers, 723;—with Sītā, 705–11; as role model, 5, 17; romantic interlude of, with Sītā in asoka grove, 790–91; royal lineages established by, 799; Śabari welcomes, and Lakṣmanā, 348; sacrifices of, 17–19, 191;—agniṣṭoma and atirātra, 845;—aśvamedha (see aśvame-dha);—paunārātkika, 726;—performed by, for thousands of years, 845;—vājapeya, 726, 845; sages assembled at court of, 728, 807, 844; Sampātī assists, 24, 418; sandhyā rites of, 137, 182–83, 187, 223,
INDEX • 917

270, 544, 829; Šārdūla describes capture of spies and forces of, 563–64;—describes, to Rāvāna, 564; Śātrughna and (see Śātrughna); saves Sītā from crow, 492–93, 496;—recalled, 533–34; sees omens, 330–33, 576, 695;—vision of Indra, 267; sends Sugrīva back to Kiṣkindhā, 788–89;—Lakṣmana and Sītā into hiding, 291;—Lakṣmana to confront Indrajit, 661;—Lakṣmana to exhort Sugrīva, 386–87;—Śātrughna to fight and kill Lavaṇa, 17–18, 809–10;—Śātrughna back to Madhurā, 18, 819–20; sets out for Mount Rṣaymukā, 56, 352; shatters lance of Rāvana with javelin, 691; sight of, will allay grief, 219; signet ring of (see signet ring); simulacra of head and bow of, 564–68; Sītā begs, for golden deer, 310–11;—exhorts Lakṣmana to find, 313–14;—implores, to take her to Daṇḍaka forest, 161–63;—laments believing, dead, 566–67;—laments recalling, 473–75, 477–78; Sītā rebukes harsh treatment and accusations of, 707–708;—refuses to touch male other than, 491;—takes ring of, 14, 487, 522;—warns, of perils of violence, 271–72; Sītā’s devotion to, 442, 460, 462–63, 464, 465, 467, 477, 491, 524, (see also Sītā); slaying of Khara’s army by, recalled, 52, 300, 301, 327, 460, 677; as son of Aditi, 849; sons of, as disciples of Vālmiki, 6, 10, 17–18, 57, 839–41;—as reflections of Rāma, 840;—perform the Rāmāyana for Rāma, 19, 58, 839–41;—Vālmiki teaches, the Rāmāyana, 6, 10, 57 (see also Kuṣa; Lava); splits seven sāla trees as demonstration of skill, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; stoicism of, 11; story of, known to Vālmiki, 56–57; stuns Mārica with arrow, 10, 83, 306; suffering of, 798; Sugrīva challenges, to split sāla trees, 53, 363–64;—consoles, 357–58, 530–31;—enumerates monkeys to, 396;—narrows conflict with Vālin to, 13, 26, 359–63, 408;—promises to search for and recover Sītā, 13, 357;—reassures, 537–38; Šuka and Sāraṇa describe, to Rāvana, 556–57, 561; Sumantra delivers message of, to Daśaratha, 192–94; summonss Sītā to assembly, 841–43; as Supreme Being, Lord, Soul, or Spirit, 4, 20, 40, 475, 709–12, 790; Sūrpanakhā asks Rāvana to kill, 301;—seduces, 12, 33, 284–85; takes no wife after Sītā, 845; teases Sūrpanakhā, 285; tells story of Ila/Iīla story, 833–37;—of Nimi, 802–5;—of Nrga, 800–802;—of Yadu, 805–7; threatens cosmic destruction, 337–38; tours Citrakīṭta and Mandākini with Sītā, 232–34;—travels from Lāṅkā to Ayodhyā from Puspaka with Sītā, 715–16; unable to distinguish Vālin from Sugrīva, 364–65;—to find and recover Sītā without Sugrīva, 25; Vālin rebukes for killing, 26, 369–70;—begs forgiveness from, 372; Vasiṣṭha instructs, and Sītā prior to the consecration 136; Vibhīṣana advises, to solicit aid of Samudra, 553;—lends Puspaka to, 31, 713–14;—takes refuge (śaranaṃ) with, 31, 549, 551–52; visits Agastya’s brother, 275–76;—Atri, 259–63;—visits Śarabhaṅga, 268;—Sutikṣa, 52, 56, 269–71, 274–75; Viṣṇu’s bow and, 127–28; Viśvāmitra gives weapons-spells to, 10, 80–81;—requests aid of, 10, 71–75, 305; vital points (vitals) of, pierced by Indrajit’s arrows, 584–85; vow of, to annihilate Sītā’s abductor, 511;—to Kāla, 848, 850–51; vows to kill Rāvana, 687;—to kill Vālin, 13, 25, 53, 359, 361, 486;—to protect seers of Daṇḍaka forest, 271, 273;—weapon-spells of, 561, 588, 653, 676;—deployed against Indrajit, 654–55;—deployed against Kum-bhakarna, 626–627;—deployed against Rāvana, 684, 685, 689–90, 692–93, 698;—weapons of, take on human form, 853; welcomes Durvāsas, 850; wears clothing of ascetic, 11, 170, 171 (see also barkcloth garments); will go to Brahmāloka, 54, 799; world regarded as empty by, 844; Yudhajīt dispatches Gārgya as messenger to, 845–46 Rāma Jāmadagnya, 11; as avatāra (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 21;encounter of, with Rāma 126–28; exterminates kṣatriyas, 126–27; obeys father’s command to kill mother, 154 Rāmakathā (“Tale of Rāma”), 3; representations of Sūrpanakhā in, 33 Rāmarājya: Gandhi on, 42; Rāma inaugurates, 5–6, 16; as utopian reign, 17–18, 42 Rāma story: foretold, 422;—recalled 284, 316–17; 329, 355, 480–82, 510;—Rāma recaps, during return journey, 715–16 Rāmāyana: as cautionary tale, 5, 41; as cultural work, 47; consecration of Rāma ends some versions of, 16; Jain versions of, 5n, 36; legacy of, 41–43; as morality play, 5; political history of, 35; popularity of in religious cultures of Asia, 5(n); reception of, 20; in religious history of Hinduism, 40; versions of, 3, 4, 5, 7, 9–10, 16, 19, 27, 33, 36, 37, 42, 43, 46–47; See also Vālmiki Rāmāyana Rambhā (apāsaras): Indra sends, to seduce Viśvāmitra, 115–16; Kubera Vaiśravaṇa curses Virādha because of, 267; Nalakū-bara confirms story of, 767; Rāvana rapes, 766–67; reports rape to Nalakūbara, 767; Viśvāmitra curses, 118

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
Rāmāyana: reenacted annually in India, 6

Rāmāyana: as version of Rāmāyaṇa, 36

rape: of Ahalyā, by Indra, 774; of apsaras Rambhā by Rāvana, 766–68; of Arajā by Daṇḍa, 827–28; common to all men, 774

Rāsātala (underworld), 53, 92, 356, 517, 546, 569, 655, 817; Hanumān pushes Mount Arīṣṭa into, 517; rākṣasas flee to, 731, 740, 744, 817; Rāvana goes to, 760–61;— goes to, recalled, 545;— prepares to go to, 757; Sītā enters, 843; sons of Sagara tear up, 92; Sumālīn and advisors come up from, 744; Sumālīn leaves, 740. See also Pātāla

Raśmiketu (rākṣasa), 443, 547; Rāma fights and kills, 581

Rati (goddess of pleasure): Sītā compared to, 315; wife of god of love, 315, 459

Rāvaṇa: abducted women curse, 16, 30, 762–63; abducts daughters of serpents, yakṣas, rākṣasas, men, dāityas, and dānavas, 5, 16, 762–63;— Sītā, 12–15, 24, 52, 320–27, 355, 357, 429; accuses Mālyavān of treachery and humiliates him, 572; acquires epithet, “Rāvana,” 30, 752;— ninety-nine powers of illusion, 761; admonishes Mārīca, 307–8; Agastya narrates genealogy and history of, 16–17, 729–82; aims javelin at Viṣhṇu, 686; alliance of, with Nivātakacanas, 761;— with Vālin, 26, 782; alternative title of poem foregrounds, 3, 57, 354; Anaranya curses, 16, 756; Aṅgada tells Sampāti about fight of, with Jātāyus, 417–18;— attacks palace of, 579; appearance of, impresses Rāma, 604; approaches and meets Sītā in ashram, 315–17; Arjuna Kārtavirya defeats, 16, 26, 30, 780;— fights and captures, 779–80;— fights ministers of, 778–79;— Rāma, fights Rāvana, 608–9, 684–85, 687, 689–98; asks Brahmagūpta for immortality, 743;— Mārīca to aid in abduction of Sītā, 52, 303–4;— guise of brahman ascetic, 13, 314–17;— true form, 319–20; attempts to lift mountain 30 35, 363; austerities of, 29, 299, 444, 742–43; bathes in Narmadā, 776; battles gods, 768–73;— Kubera and yakṣas, 749–51; begs Kumbhakarṇa to drive off the enemy army, 615;— to save him, 616–17; birth of, 28–29, 741;— accompanied by dire omens, 28–29; boasts of his power to Sītā, 318–19, 754; boon of, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 636–37, 649, 742–43, 745, 768, 772, 779; Brahmagnant boon to, 68, 74;— protects, from Yama, 760;— stops auto-decapitation of, 299, 742–43;— tells, to release Indra, 773;— proposes alliance between, and Nivātakacanas, 760–61;— restores heads of, 743;— tells Yama not to strike, 760; briefly Kumbhakarna on battle, 615; brings abducted women to Lankā, 763; broods upon hearing the sound of the monkey army, 570; cannibalism of, 330, 468, 474, 754;— of ministers of, 748, 778; cannot be slain without an ally, 392; challenges Vālin to battle, 781; chariot battle of, with Rāma, 689–98, 695–98; chariot of, fashioned through power of illusion, 320; claims Prahasa has beheaded Rāma, 565; comes to abode of Varuṇa, 761; conquers city of Aśmanagara, 761;— Kubera, 318, 446, 299, 545, 749–51;— the serpents, 760; as conquistador, 5, 749–51, 755–56, 758–62, 768–73; consecration of, as lord of rākṣasas, 745–46; consults his ministers, 544–45, 564; cremation of, 720; crimes of, 299; cursed to die on account of a woman, 16, 762; cuts off heads as offering, 299; Daśāgriva, “Ten–necked,” as birth name of, 30, 752; death of, 3, 5, 15, 21, 30, 53, 56, 698; deeds of, recounted, 545–46; defeat of, presaged in Trijātā’s dream, 476; defeats Indra and the gods, 773; defiler of sacred rites, 5; delighted with Indrajit’s, 586; delusion of, 693; description of palace complex of, 443–46, 453;— of wives and consorts of, 29–30, 446–450; descriptions of, 27–30, 299–300, 448–49, 509, 604; 673; destroys Nandana and other gardens, 748–49; Dhānayamālinī, Dhāñayamālinī, 476; does good without being killed, 707; effigy of, burned at Kāshī, 68, 315, 318–19, 776; encounter of, with Vālin, 16, 26, 27, 30, 370, 781–82; encounters Nandīśvara, 751; enemy of Indra, 69; enlists aid of Mārīca, 13, 303–09;— Madhu as ally, 766; enmity
of, with Kubera, 29, 742–51; exchanges words and blows with Hanumān, 605–6; excoriates Vibhiśana, 31, 548 exhausted in battle, 609, 693–94, 773; faints at news of Kumbhakarna's death, 628; falls at Sītā's feet, 521;—into stupor, 672; fate impels, 52, 318, 329, 548–49, 629, 679, 693; feats of, described, 299; feeds slain messenger to rākṣasas, 748; fells monkey champions, 605; fights and fells Nila, 606–7;—sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761–62;—Suṅgra, 605; fights and kills Anaranya, 755–56;—Anaranya, 756; fights and vanquishes Marutta, 754; Nivātakacacas;—760; serpents, 760; fights Arjuna Kārtaṇyā, 775–79;—Indra, 771–73;—Jaṭāyus, 322–23;—Jaṭāyus, recalled, 417–18; Kubera, 573;—Lakṣmaṇa, 607–8;—Vaivasvata, 757–60;—Yama, Kāla, and Mṛtyu, 757–60; final battle of, with Rāma, 695–98; foresees his own destruction, 579; forges nonaggression pact with Arjuna, 780; fraternal conflict of, with Viṣṇu, 546, 452–53, 520, 531–32, 546, 452;—for destruction of, 254;—etc., incarnate as monkeys to aid in defeat of, 24, 70–71; goes forth to war with Mahodara, Mahā-pārśva and Viruṭpākṣa, 679; goes to Bhogavati, 760;—Kāliāsa, 299, 545, 749–51; Maniṃati, 760;—Rasālana, 760–61; goes with Mārica to Rāma's ashram, 52, 309; grief of, 594, 603, 610, 628–29, 640, 651, 672–74, 683; in guise of brahman mendicant praises Sītā in sexual terms, 13, 315–16; Hanumān brought before, 14, 508–9;—dazzled by splendor of, 509;—fears Sītā might mistake him for, 479;—fights and stuns, 608;—observes closely, 464;—reports his confrontation with, to monkeys, 523;—reviles, 14, 510–12;—searches inner apartments of, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32, 546, 452;—searches palace of, 442–45;—sees, 449, 451;—vows to bind and bring, 430;—warns, of destruction, 511;—urges, to return Sītā to Rāma, 511–12; Hanu-mān's destruction of asoka grove enraged, 499; harrares divine beings, 747; has rākṣasa women take Sītā to see Rāma's body, 587; has Vidyujjihva show illusory head of Rāma to Sītā, 565–66; hears of Akampana's (1) death, 599;—hears of death of Khara, Dūṣana, and Triśīrās, 300; holds forth on types of men, 544–45; holds Sītā captive, 13, 330–705; hurls lance at Rāma, 691;—javelin at Vibhiśana, 686; in guise of brahman ascetic, 314–17; in guise of mendicant, assumes true form, 319–20;—of mendicant, praises Sītā in sexual terms, 13, 315–16;—reveals identity to Sītā, 317; Indra requests Viṣṇu to kill 10, 768; inhabits Laṅkā as lord of, 745, 746, 747, 748, 757; inner apartments of, 23, 33, 327–28, 450, 452, 466, 470–71, 472 747, 572, 699, 765, 782; intones mantras, 776; invincibility of, through boon, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 636–37, 649, 742–43, 745, 768, 772, 779; invokes the serpent weapon-spell of the rākṣasas, 690; invokes weapon-spell of the asuras, 684;—weapon-spell of Maya, 685; invulnerable of, to supernatural beings, 10, 743; Jain representations of, 36; Jaṭāyus admonishes, 321–22;—challenges, to battle, 321;—destroys flying chariot of, 322–23;—reviles, 321–23;—fights, 322–23;—javelin, Maya gives to, 691;—of Indra shatters lance of, 691;—of, forged by Maya, 686; of, Rāma removes and breaks, 687;—of, strikes down Lakṣmaṇa, 686–87; justification for his evil nature, 28; Kaikasi counsels, with ministers, 570;—incites sibling envy of, 29, 742; kills four hundred Kālakeya dāityas, 761;—husband of Śūrpaṇakhā, 29, 763;—messenger of Kubera, 748;—monkeys, 679–80;—troops of Yama, 758–59;—Vidyujjihva, 29, 33, 763; Kubera half-brother of, 29, 742, 744; Kumbhakarna lectures, on statecraft (nitiśāstra), 31, 615–16; laments for Indrajit, 672–73;—for Kumbhakarna, 629; liberates condemned souls, 758; lineage and adventures of, 74, 728–82; makes Dūṣana chief of Khara's army, 763; makes his first sortie, 603; Mālyavān advises, to make peace, 571–72; marches to Madhu's city, 765; Mārica foretells death of, 306;—rebukes, 308–9;—tells, of his past encounters with Rāma, 305–7;—urges, to consult with Vibhiśana, 305;—warns, 52, 304–6; marries Mandodari, 746;—Śūrpaṇakhā to Vidyujjihva, 746;—master of weapon-sells, 738; Maya forges javelin for, 686;—gives, Mandodari in marriage, 545; meaning of epithet of, 30; meets Meghanāda in the Nikumbhili grove, 764;—Nārada, 756;
Rāvana (continued)

ministers flatter, 545–46; ministers of, 744, 749, 751, 752, 758, 761, 765, 769, 776, 778, 781–82;—battle guardians of the underworld, 758;—boast of their abilities, 546–47;—kill sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761;—reassure, of safety, 545–46;—report death of Indrajit to, 672;—slaughter Arjuna’s ministers, 778 (see also Dūhmārkaśa; Mahodara; Mārica; Pra-hasta; Sāraṇa, Šūka); mocks Mahodara, 619;—Nandiśvara, 751;—molests Vedavati, 21–22, 752–54; mortally wounds Jātāyus, 13, 24, 323, 341; Mṛtyu asks to kill, 759;—Nalakībara curses, 16, 767–68; Nandiśvara curses, 16, 24, 751–52; Nārada praises valor of, 756;—Niśākara foresees abduction of Sitā by, 422; number of forces of, six million, 573; number of subjects of, more than three hundred twenty million, 328; objects to Meghanāda’s sacrifices, 764; offering of, to Śiva, 776;—offers heads as oblations, 299, 742;—Sitā sovereignty over Laṅkā, 328;—omens appear at birth of, 29;—presage defeat of, 695; on the nature of kings, 307; only two mortal beings ever defeat, 26;—oppresses gods and sages, 10, 69;—kshatriyas, 752;—the three worlds, 74;—orders capture of Indra, 772;—construction of sleeping chamber for Kumbhakarna, 747;—Dūhmārkaśa to lead a sortie, 594;—Hanumān paraded through Laṅkā, 513;—Hanumān’s execution, 511;—Hanumān’s tail set on fire, 513;—Indrajit into battle, 653;—Khara to rule the Daṇḍaka forest, 763;—kimkaras to capture Hanumān, 499;—Kumbhakarna to march forth accompanied by an army, 620;—Mahodara, Mahāpārśva and Virūpākṣa, to send forth more troops, 678;—Mārica to take form of golden deer, 303–4, 308;—Pra-hasta to lead a sortie, 599;—Pra-hasta to question Hanumān, 510;—rāḵaṣasa women to pressure Sitā, 470;—rāḵaṣasa women to guard Sitā, 327, 330;—rāḵaṣasa to awaken Kumbhakarna, 610;—rāḵaṣasa to capture and kill Aṅgada, 579;—Vidyujihva to create illusion of Rāma’s severed head and his bow, 564;—places Sitā in aśoka grove under guard of fearsome rāḵaṣasa women, 330;—plans to conquer three worlds, 757;—the world guardians, 757;—popular representations of, 42;—positions rāḵaṣasa chiefs to defend Laṅkā, 572;—power of, 299;—power(s) of illusion of, 341, 545–46, 685, 693, 696, 751, 761;—praises Vālin, 782;—prepares to go to Raśāta, 757;—presses Rāma hard in battle, 690; proclaims victory over Yama, 760; Pulastya orders Arjuna to release, 779–80; Puspaka(vimāna) of, described, 445–46 (see also Puṣpa/ Puṣpaka(vimāna): Rāvana;—questions Śuka and Sāraṇa, 557; radical opposite of Rāma, 28; rage of, at death of Indrajit, 673; rāḵaṣa women report Hanumān to, 499;—Rāma destroys rāḵaṣa army of, 15, 676;—deploys weapons spells against, 684, 685, 689–90, 692–93, 698;—dismisses, from battle, 15, 30, 609;—kills, 15, 698;—orders funeral of, 30, 702;—orders Śuṅgriva to search for and kill, 358, 380, 398–99;—praises, 702;—sends warning to, via Śuka and Sāraṇa, 556;—shatters lance of, with javelin, 691;—vows to kill, 687;—Rāma’s expression of fraternal feelings for, 30, 702;—treatment of, 30, 609, 702;—rapes apsarās Rambhā, 766–68; ravages heavenly gardens, 747;—realizes his failures, 28, 616;—the fortunes of war have turned against him, 681;— that Lakṣaṇa is a portion of Viṣṇu, 608;—recalls his vulnerability to humans, 609;—receives intelligence on the forces of his enemy, 557–61;—redirects huge javelin at Lakṣaṇa, 686;—refuses to return Sitā, 563, 570, 572;—regrets his failure to heed advice of Vibhiṇa, 629;—his treatment of Vibhiṇa, 629;—resolves to destroy Rāma by abducting Sitā, 13, 304;—to kill Sitā, 673;—reviles Rāma, 303, 466, 469;—Śuka and Sāraṇa, 562;—Vibhiṇa as a traitor, 548;—riddles Mātali with arrows, 690;—rushes upon Sitā with sword drawn, 674;—Sampāti (vulture) reveals identification and location of, 418–19;—scurches monkeys with Tāmasa weapon-spell, 683;—seeks alliance with Madhu, 545;—counsel from rāḵaṣa, 544–45;—sends Akampana into battle, 596;—Akṣa and an army to capture Hanumān, 503–4;—his brothers Mahodara and Mahāpārśva to guard sons, 630;—Indrajit against Hanumān, 506;—Jamunālin to fight Hanumān, 499–500;—Khara and Dūṣana to Daṇḍaka forest, 763–64;—kimkaras against Hanumān, 499;—Kumbha and Nikumbha into battle, 647;—Makarāka to kill Rāma, 651;—rāḵaṣa to isolate and kill Rāma, 675;—seven sons of minister against Hanumān, 501;—sons off to battle, 630;—Śuka and Sāraṇa to spy on Rāma and monkey army, 555–57;
—Śūrpanakhā to Daṇḍaka forest, 33, 763–64; severed heads of, reappear, 697; sexual predator, 5, 21, 28; shows Sitā his palace, 328;—illusion of Rāma’s head and bow, 565–66; Sitā admonishes, 467–68;—foretells destruction of, 474;—foretells doom of, 329–30;—offers hospitality to, 316;—rebukes, for abduction, 325–26;—rejects advances of, 317–19;—reviles, 318–20, 326, 329–30, 467–69; Śiva crushes arms of, under mountain, 30, 752;—gives name, “Rāvana,” to Daśāgriṅga, 752;—pleased with, 30, 752; sons of, offer to take up the battle, 630;—engage in great battle with monkeys, 631;—set out with a vast host, 630–31; speaks Sanskrit like a brahman, 479; spies report to, 564; steals Puṣpaka, 299, 545, 751; strikes Hanumān with arrows, 609; strikes down Indra’s horses, 690;—Lakṣaṇa with javelin, 686;—Lakṣaṇa with lance, 408;—Lakṣaṇa’s arrows, 683–64;—and defeats Kubera, 751; stuns Hanumān, 606; subjugates Kubera, 545; Sugrīva sends out monkeys to search for, 398–408;—vows to kill, 357, 392; Sampāti (vulture) reports witnessing abduction by, 419–20; Suṇāśva (rākṣasa) dissuades, from killing Sitā; Śūrpanakhā asks, to kill Rāvana, 301; describes Rāma, Lakṣaṇa, and Sitā to, 300–301;—incites, to take revenge, 300–302;—reports death of Khara and Dūṣaṇa to, 299;—reports events in Daṇḍaka forest, 299–30;—reproaches, 763; Śūrpanakhā’s report enrages, 300; surveys Rāma’s army, 557; takes possession of Lāṅkā, 744–46, 757; takes Sitā to and shows Lāṅkā, 327–28; tears up Śaravana, 752; tells Hanumān to return Sitā, 511–12;—Sitā Rāma is dead, 565; ten heads of, 741; terrorizes worlds, 5, 299, 742; “thorn (in the side) of the world (lokakāntaka),” 18, 69; threatens to kill Sitā, 14, 330, 468–69; threatens Mārica, 32, 308; tries to kill Sitā, 674–75; tries to woo Sitā, 328–29, 465–67; Trijaṭa foretells downfall of, 475–76; unable to lift Lakṣaṇa, 608; unable to pass over place of Śiva’s dalliance, 751; Vālin captures, 26, 30, 781; Vedavati refuses to curse, 753; Vibhiṣaṇa advises, to return Sitā, 547–48;—dissuades, from Hanumān’s execution, 512–13;—performs funerary rites for, 30, 701–2; visits Mārica, 303;—Sitā in aṣōka grove, 463–70; Viṣṇu incarnates to kill, 10, 69–70, 710; Viśravas curses, 16, 29, 33, 741;—to avenge the deaths of kinsmen, 678;—to conquer heaven, 765;—to destroy Rāma by abducting Sitā, 13, 303–4;—to equal or surpass Kubera, 29, 742;—to kill Madhu, 765;—to kill Rāma, 13, 327, 675;—never to give up Sitā, 557;—to subjugate Indra, 765;—wepons of, infused with power of illusion, 696;—weapon-spells of, 758; wives and courtiers of, described, 446–52;—sympathize with Sitā, 468, 470; woos Sitā, 320; 328–29, 465–66; worships golden liṅga, 776; wounds Jāṭayūs, 323 Rāvanaśadha: also known as Bhāṭṭikāvyā, 41 Rāvani. See Indrajit. 

Ravi. See Śūrya

Rcika: husband of Satyavati, 86; sells his son Śunahṣeṇa, 113; and Śunahṣeṇa story, 113–14; Viṣṇu gives bow to, 127 rebirth. See reincarnation recensions: of Rāmāyana, 7–9, 40, 44, 45 recitation (parāyana). See Vālmiki Rāmāyana: recitation of reincarnation: Vedavatī as, of Sitā, 21, 753–54. See also birth(s)

religious history: of Hinduism in Mahābhārata, 40;—in Rāmāyana, 40 Renukā (mother of Rāma Jāmadagnya): Rāma Jāmadagnya kills, 154 righteousness (dharma), 5, 17, 20, 27, 40, 164, 167, 177, 850. passim; adherence to, by Rāma, 11; consists in speaking truth, 659; discourses on by Kumbhakarna, 615–16; by Lakṣaṇa, 658–60; by Mālayāvān, 570–72; by Rāma, 238–41; 272–73; 370–72, passim;—by Sitā, 270–72; by Vālin, 369–70;—as highest form of compassion, 493; of kṣatriyas, 154, 271–73; of Kuśanābhā’s daughters, 85; meanings and translations of, 46; as quality of Rāvana, 567;—of Viṣṇu, 709; not shown by Nimi toward Vasiṣṭha, 805; as the very essence of this world, 272; virtues of, 85, 369; of women, 157–58, 161, 162–63, 172, 197, 109, 260; in yuga theory, 37

ring. See signet ring rites: abhiḥjit, 68; agnihotra, 28, 87, 104, 105, 119, 174, 189, 211, 229, 262, 268, 306, 567, 571, 741, 786, 853; agrisoma, 567, 764, 845, 853; for ancestors, 124, 249; aptoryāma, 68; atirātra, 67, 68, 645, 845; āyus, 68; bali, 105; benedictory, 678, 748; birth, 813; for funerals (see funerary rites): gosava, 845; homa, 105; jyotiṣoma, 68; lunar, 271; morning, 284; śraddha, 213, 215, 275–76; vajapeya, 178, 726, 845; viśvajit, 68; water libations as, 76, 87, 283, 379, 419. See also aśvamedha; sacrifice(s); vaśiṇava sacrifice
ritual consecration: golden image of Sītā as fit for, 838; of Marutta, 754; of Nimi, 802, 804, 805. See also royal consecration
ritual offerings, 66, 84, 87, 105, 111, 263, 264, 435, 641; cows eat, 419, 492
Ṛṣabha (monkey troop leader), 540–41, 584, royal duty.
See also Ṛṣabha (mountain), 399, 643, 645; sandal-wood grows on, 401–2
ṛṣi(s) (seer[s]): omniscient vision of, 4, 39
Ṛṣyāṅgī: in epic, 23; Śaṃskṛta in, 23; Śaṃskṛta's sons, 5, 17; Śaṃskṛta's daughter-in-law, 852; of Śveṣa, 851; Śveṣa's sons, 424;
Śatrughātin and Suvrata, 374, 392, 408, 416, 454; daughter-in-law of Vālīn, 371; recovered, 381; Śugrīva embraces, 391
Śabāla (wish-fulfilling cow): as gift of Nṛga, 800–801; provides offerings to ancestors, 105; of Vaśiṣṭha, 105–6
Śabari (ascetic woman): asceticism of, 347–48; 3 ashram of, 348; immolation and ascent of, to heaven, 349; Kañbānda directs Rāma to ashram of, 53, 346–47; meeting of Rāma with, 53, 56, 348–40; social status of, 41; welcomes Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 348
Śaci (Paulomi): Anuhāda abducted (compari-son), 396; daughter of Puloman, wife of Indra, 396–97, 490; Indra abducts, 308, 319; Jayanta son of, 770; lord of (see Indra); stolen from Indra, 319
sacrifice(s) (yajñās), 10, 32, 29; of Ambariṣa, 113–14; of Bali, 424; of Dakṣa, 292, 338; to a home, 191; of Ila, 837; of Indra (see Indra: aṣvamedha of; see Indra: performs vaishnava sacrifice); of Indrajit (see Indrajit: sacrifice(s)) of Janaka, (see Janaka: sacrifice of); for Mahēśvara, 395; of Marutta (see Marutta: aṣvamedha performed by; Marutta: sacrifices to Śiva); of Mitrasaha (see Mitrasaha Saudāsa: sacrifice of); of Nimi (see Nimi: Gautama
performs sacrifice for); offerings from, not reused, 196; rākṣasas engage in, 440, 443; rākṣasas' portion at, 176; of Rāma, 17–19, 845, (see also Rāma: sacrifices of); ritual, 40; of Sagara (see Sagara: aśvamedha sacrifice of); son-producing, of Brahmadatta, 86;—of Daśaratha, 10, 68–70; of Triśaṅku (see Triśaṅku: Viśvāmitra performs sacrifice for); vedic, 10, 32; vedic, in Lāṅkā, 443; of Viśvāmitra (see Viśvāmitra: sacrifice[s] of). See also agniṣṭoma; aśvamedha; bahusuvannaka; maheśvara; rājasūya; rites; vaśnava sacrifice Sagara (king of the Ikṣvākus), 122, 252, 432, passim; aśvamedha sacrifice of, 91–92; boon of, 90; sons of, 90–96—Kailey recount story of, to Daśaratha, 170; obey father's command, 154; story of, 90–94; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 96 Sāgara (Samudra) (god of the ocean): appears before Rāma, 554; proposes that Nala should construct a bridge, 554; Rāma assaults, 553–54;—causes to manifest, 553–54;—petitions, 553;—solicits help of, 553; seeks to aid Hanumān, 432–33; urges Maināka to rise from ocean, 433; Viḥiṣaṇa advises Rāma to solicit help of, 553. See also ocean sages. See ascetic(s) Sahya (mountains), 541; monkey army marches through, 542; Rambha and troops live in, 558 Śāhīya, 200; gives body to hawk, 145; promises body to brahman, 145 Śailūṣa (king of gandharvas), 402; sons of, protect country of gandharvas, 845; Vajrajāvalī daughter of, 747 Śakas: northern quarter location of country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107 Śakra. See Indra sāla tree(s): branch of, used as seat, 358; splitting of seven, by Rāma, 53, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; as weapon, 368 Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā: daughter of Sandhyā, 732; wife of Vidyutkeśa, 732 Sālmali (river), 204 Sālmali or sālmalī (tree), 326, 352, 546, 667. See also kiṭaśālmalī tree Sāmaga (brahman who chants Sāmaveda), 383 Sāmbara (asura), 460, 629, 649, 759, 768; also called Timidhvaṇa, 141; Indra fights, 141. See also Timidhvaṇa Šambasādana (asura), Kesarin kills, 487 Šambhu. See Śiva Šambhu (king of dāiyas), 753, 759 Śambūka (Śūdra ascetic), 16; austerities of, 18–19, 822; birth of, as Śūdra, 822; execution/killing of, by Rāma, 18–20, 41, 822–23; Nārada (minister) informs Rāma about, 18, 821–22 Šamhāras (weapon-spells), 75 Śamkāṣyā: capital city of Kuśadvaja, 121 Šamkocana (mountain), 557–58 Sampāti (minister of Viḥiṣaṇa), 573, 734 Sampāti (vulture): Aṅgada distressed upon seeing, 416–17;—narrates story of Rāma to, 417–18; arrives to place where southern search party is fasting, 416; boon to, from Niśākara, 412; discovers death of brother Jātāyus, 417; elder brother of Jātāyus, 14, 24, 416–17; falls to Vindhyā mountains, 422; fights Prajaṅgha, 581; grief of, 417; informs southern search party of Rāvāṇa's and Sītā's location, 14, 24, 418–20; Jātāyus and, make wager on Kailāsa, 421; monkeys do not trust, 417; prophecy of new wings for, by Niśākara, 422; provides assistance to Rāma, 24, 418; restoration of wings of, 423; saves southern search party from fasting to death by revealing Sītā's location, 14, 418–20; scolds Supārśva, 423; southern search party desires, as food, 416; story of, and Jātāyus, 418, 421–22; story of meeting with Niśākara narrated to Aṅgada by, 420–22; Supārśva son of, 419, 420; Suṣeṇa wants to send to ocean of milk, 591–92; tells Aṅgada of fight between Jātāyus and Rāvana, 417–18; tells Aṅgada his own history, 420–23; water-libations of, for Jātāyus, 419–20; wings of, burned by sun, 418 Samrāṭ (Universal Emperor): as title, 35 Samudra. See Śāgara Ṣāmvrata (brahman sage/seer): said to officiate at Marutta's sacrifice, 817; urges Marutta not to fight, 754 Ṣāmvrata (weapon-spell): Bharata kills gandharvas with, 846; of Kāla, 80 Ṣamyodhaḥaṃṭaka (yakṣa): Rāvana attacks and defeats, 749 Sanatkumāra: tells Daśaratha story of Ṛṣyaśṛṅga, 61, 63 sandalwood: gośīrṣa, 390; hariśyāma, 390; padma, 390 Sandhyā (goddess of twilight): Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā daughter of, 732
sandhyā rites, 458, 828; evening, 200, 212, 223, 270, 276, 544; morning, 137; propriety of women performing, 458; of Rāma, 182–83, 187, 270, 276, 544, 829; of Suyajña, 165; of Vālīn, 781–82
Śaṅkara. See Śiva
Sanskrit: anustubh common meter of, 8; brahmanical usage of, 479; difficulties in translation of, 44–47; Hanumān speaks to Śītā in, 479; Ilava disguised as brahman speaks, 275; language of humans, 479; Mahābhārata composed in, 8; scribal transmission of manuscripts composed in, 7; Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa composed in, 3
Śaṅtā: marriage of, to Rāyaśṛṅga, 61, 63; travels to Ayodyhā, 64
Śaṅtānas(s) (heavenly world[s]); next to Brahmaloka, 854
Saptajanas (group of seven sages): asham of, 364–66. See also seven seers
Śarabha (minister of Viśvāmi): 458; Sārvabhauma (elephant): mount of Kuśa
Śarabja (monkey troop leader): declares impossibility of spying on Rāma's forces, 563; declares impossibility of spying on spies and Rāma's forces, 563–64;—Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 564; names monkey leaders and their divine parents, 564; spared by Rāma, 563
Sarga (chapter), 6, 10, 45, passim
Śarmīṭhā: as daitya, 805; daughter of Vṛṣaparvan, 805; mother of Puru, 805; favored wife of Yayātī, 805
Śatrūṃjaya (elephant), 165–66, 724; Daśara-tha's aged elephant, 236
Śārvabhauna (elephant): mount of Kubera, 405, 540, 635
Śatabali (monkey troop leader), 560, 587, 788; arrives in Kīskindhā, 397; fails to find Śītā, 409; leader of northern search party, 404, 407; number of troops of, 541, 580
Śatahradā: mother of Virādha, 266
Śātānanda, 112, 841; purohita of Janaka, 102–3, 120–21
Śātānanda: son of Gautama, 103; tells story of Viśvāmitra and Vasiṣṭha, 103–17
Śatrughātin (son of Śatrughna son): consecration of, 852; established in Vaidiśa, 852
Śatrughna, 10, 58, 149, passim; accompanies Bharata to Rājaγṛha, 130, 204; aids Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 724; attacks Mantharā, 23, 215; and Bharata inseparable, 123; birth of, 71; boon of, 817; character synopsis of, 23; childhood of, 72; as co-avatāra, 22; consecrates sons, Subhū and Śatrughātin, 853; desires to follow Rāma to heaven, 852; devoted to Bharata, 72; etymology of name of, 815; fights and kills Lavana, 17–18, 815–17; founds Madhurā (Mathurā), 18, 23, 818; founds Śurasenā, 817; gains city of Madhupuri as residence, 817; greets Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Śītā, 722–23; grief of, 214, 222–23, hears of births of Lava and Kuśa, 813; hears recitation of Rāmāyaṇa, 18, 58, 818–19; laments Rāma and mourns Daśaratha, 213–14; makes preparations for consecration of Rāma, 721–25; marries Śrutakirti 123, 125; messengers report events in Ayodhyā to, 852; prepares highway for Rāma's return, 721; purohita of, Kāñcana, 852;—unnamed, 818; questions Cyavana about Lavana, 814; Rāma asks Bhadrā about, 791;—consecrates, in Madhurā,
809–10;—dismisses, 18, 819–20;—dispatches to kill Lavaṇa, 17–18, 809–10;—gives, arrow of Viṣṇu, 810;—informs, of intention to abandon Sītā, 792–94;—sends back to Madhurā, 18, 819–20; requests Rāma to deal with Lavaṇa, 809; resides in Madhupuri (Surasaṇā), 817–18; returns to Ayodhyā, 18, 818–19, 852;—to Ayodhyā with Bha­rata, 206; role of, in epic of, 23; sets forth to kill Lavaṇa, 811; spends night in Vālmiki’s ashram, 18, 812, 818; Śrutakirti wife of, 125; Sumitrā mother of, 71; twin brother of Lakṣmanā, 18, 71; youngest brother of Rāma, 18, 23; Yudhājīt takes, to his home, 130
Satyavatī: sister of Viśvāmitra, 86; transformed into Kauśiki River, 86; wife of Rṣika, 86. See also Kauśiki
Saudāśa. See Mitrasaṇa Saudāśa
Saumanas (mountain peak): made of gold, 400
Saumana (one of the elephants who support the earth), 93
Saumana (spell): Viśvāmitra intones and gives Rāma, 81
Saumitra. See Lakṣmaṇa
Savitra: eighth among Vasus, 769; fights and kills Śumālin, 769
Sāvitrī: as example of wifely obedience, 163, 260
Sāvitrī mantra, 853
sayings, popular. See proverbs
seer(s): 29, 32, 52, passim; of Citrakīṭa inform Rāma of the presence of rākṣasas, 258–59; collectively known as ṛṣis or kavis, 39; omniscient vision of, 4, 39; tell Bharata to agree to Rāma’s request, 254. See also ascetic(s); Sāptajaṇas; seven seers
self-immolation: as a means of suicide, 454. See also ordeal by fire; Sītā: fire ordeal
semen: eaten and released by Agni, 88; porridge as, 70; retention of, by Cūlin, 85; of Śiva, 88; Vasīṣṭha enters, of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803
serpent(s), 29, 70, 74, passim; arrows of Indrajit become, 592 (see also serpent-weapons); as battle standard of Prahasta, 600; Bhogavatī city of, 299, 401, 437, 439; chariot of Rāvaṇa encircled by, 770; drank nectar, 738; Garuṭa (Tārksya) defeats, 756 (see also Garuḍa); Kadrū mother of, 281; live in Rasāṭala, 760; Rāvaṇa abducts daughters of, 762–63;—conquers, 545, 760;—wishes to conquer, 757; rākṣasas use as mounts, 736, 765, 771; Śurasā mother of serpents, 280, 434, 519; throne of Dharanī emerges from earth on heads of, 843. Vāsuki, lord of, 299, 401, 760; See also Takṣaka; Vāsuki
serpent-chariot: of Śumālin, 769
serpents, five-headed. See five-headed serpents
serpent-weapons: of Indrajit Rāvaṇi, 24, 32, 584, 592; of Rāvaṇa, 689–90
seven seas, 348–49, 583, 697
seven seers (sages), 67, 112, 158, 349, 365, 765, 728. See also ascetic(s); Sāptajaṇas
sexual predator: Rāvaṇa as, 5
shadow(s): Afgārakā captures, 401; asuras capture, 399; of Hanumāṇ, 431, 432; Śimhikā captures, 436, 520
shape-shifting (taking form at will): of Akṣa, 504; of Anījanā, 425–26; of arrows, 583, 592, 690; of asuras, 275–76; of divine weapons, 80; of Dudubhi, 362, 408; of Ganges, 89, 95; of Garuḍa, 468; of gods, 10, 754; of Hanumāṇ, 429, 435–36, 438–39, 498, 500, 561, 598, 718; of Himālaya, 362; of Indra, 91, 100–101, 272, 700; of Indrajit, 584; of Jaṭāyus and Sāmpāti, 421; of Kandabanda, 344; of Kubera’s forest, 227–28; of Kumbhakarṇa, 620–21; of Maināka, 433; of Mārca, 13, 32, 304, 309–19, 306, 313–16, 325, 330–31, 333; of monkeys, 38, 70–71, 397, 538, 556, 558, 560, 574–75, 579, 580, 685, 722, 724; of rākṣasas, 273, 337, 373, 465, 483, 498–99, 581, 584, 651, 676, 704, 812–13; of Rāma’s bow and arrows, 690, 853; of Rāvaṇa, 13, 319, 459, 473, 479, 483, 578, 696, 700; of Sāmpāti, 421; of serpents, 468, 584, 592; of Śimhikā, 436; of Sugrīva, 346; of Śuka and Sārana, 556; of sun, 490, 477; of Suraśā, 434–35, 520; of Tāṭākā, 78; of Tumburu, 266–67; of Vātāpī, 275, 865; of vedas, 853; of ministers of Viḥiṣāṇa as birds, 573; of Viṣṇu, 10, 40, 69, 82, 91–94, 801, 832, 849, 866; of Yama, 373, 379, 571, 848; of Yama’s rod and war hammer, 759–60
shawl of Sītā: dropped, 357; found by monkeys, 357; Sugrīva shows Rāma, 357
sibling rivalry: among monkeys, 24; between Rāvaṇa and Kubera, 29, 741; between the sons of Diti and Aditi, 742, 744. See also fraternal conflict; Sugrīva: enmity of, with Vālīn
Siddhārtha (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 170, 204
Siddhārtha Gautama, 36
signet ring: Hanumān gives, of Rāma to Sītā, 487, 522;—gives, of Rāma to Sītā recalled, 522; Rāma gives, to Hanumān, 14, 27, 56, 407, 522

simha: birds: live on slope of Himagiri mountain, 402

Simhikā: catches Hanumān's shadow, 436; Hanumān catches and kills, 436; Rāhu son of, 784; shape-shifting of, 436 simile, extended (mālopañcā): of Ahalāyā, 102; of arms of Rāvāna arms, 449; of arrows of Rāma, 628, 698;—of arrows of Rāvāna, 605;—of arrows of Viṣṇu, 737; of āsoka grove of Rāvāna, 456–58; of Ayodhyā, 256; of Bharata's chariot, 256–57; of Daśaratha's corpse, 202; of the earth, 421; of Hanumān, 431, 504; of Kumbhakarna, 611, 620–21; of Lakhā, 646; of moon, 439, 441; of ocean, 543; of palace of Rāvāna, 444–45; of rākṣasas, 738; of Rambhā, 766; of Rāvāna, 318, 448–49, 451, 509, 469, 609; 605; of Śiśa, 442, 459, 462–65; of Śiśa's face, 244, 324; of a stream, 457; of trees, 430–431; of women of Rāvāna's inner apartments, 447–48, 449–50 simulacrum, Indrajit Rāvāṇi creates, of Śiśa, 655–56; of Rāma's head and bow produced by Vidyujjhiha, 564–68;—vanishes at Rāvāna's departure, 567 Śiśira (weapon-spell): of Soma, 80 Śiśira (mountain), 399

Sītā, 10, 12, 13, passim; abandonment of, by Rāma, 6, 17–19, 794–978; abduction of, by Rāvāna, 12–15, 24, 30, 32, 52, 56, 320–27;—by Rāvāna Brahmmā witnesses, 324;—by Rāvāna foreshadowed, 30;—by Rāvāna creatures seem to mourn, 325;—by Rāvāna crow foretells, 351;—by Rāvāna Jātāyus attempts to stop, 13, 321–23;—by Rāvāna as pivotal event of poem, 12;—by Rāvāna recalled, 355–57; 413, 434, 482, 519–20, 787;—by Rāvāna rumors arise about, 793;—by Rāvāna Supārśvā witnesses, 420;—by Virādha, 12, 32, 265–67;—by Virādha recalled, 460, 677;—Rāvāna plots, 303–4; accuses Lakṣmaṇa of treachery, 13, 313–14; Agastya praises, 278–79; age of, at exile, 317; Agni brings, out of the fire unsinged, 710;—instructs Rāma to take back, 710;—testifies to fidelity of, 710; Analā relates information to, 489; Anasūyā gives gifts to, 261; asceticism of, 464, 469, 513; ashamed of being seen in public, 706; asks Lakṣmaṇa to rescue Rāma, 313; Rāma to capture golden deer, 13, 310–11;—Sāramā to spy on Rāvana, 569; asserts fidelity to Rāma, 708; auspicious omens of, 478, 481; begs Hanumān to stay in Laṅkā, 495;—Rāma for golden deer, 310–11; birth of, from a furrow, 21, 118, 261, 461, 753–54, 843; Bhadrā tells Rāma rumors about, 791–92; blames self for misfortunes, 475, 493;—for suffering, 704; bodily signs of, 587–88; born for the destruction of rākṣasas, 678; braid of, 459, 465, 473, 478, 518, 524, 532, 569; bride price of, 118, 120, 123; captivity of, 327–30; 459–99, 516, 566–67, 587–89;—recalled, 531–32. .. character synopsis of, 12, 21–22; compassion of, 34, 272, 704; contemplates suicide, 473–74, 477–78; conversation of, with Hanumān, 480–97; cries out for help, 320–21; crow foretells abduction of, 351; daughter of earth goddess, 11, 118, 843; declines Hanumān's offer to carry back to Rāma, 490–92; defies rākṣasas women, 471–74; denies knowing Hanumān, 498–99; describes own auspicious marks, 588–89; description of, 260, 272, 459–65, 588–89; desires to visit ascetics’ ashrams, 791, 793–94; devotion of, to Rāma, 442, 460, 462–63, 464, 465, 467, 477, 491, 524; disapproves of going to Daṇḍaka forest, 272;—of killing rākṣasas, 272, 704; Dhārani/Mādhavī descends to Raśātala with, 19, 843; discovery of, saves Rāma from unrighteousness, 537; dropped ornaments of, monkeys find, 485; drops ornaments, 357;—Jatāyus sees, 418;—shawl, 326–27, 357; dwell in Pañcavaṭi with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 12, 281–83; eats meat, 791; elements grieve for, 325; enters Daṇḍaka forest with Rāma, 12, 52, 56, 264;—Raśātala, 19, 843;—the fire, 708; etymology of name of, 118; exhorts Hanumān, 494–95;—Lakṣmaṇa to find Rāma, 313–14; fasting of, 422, 459, 465, 483, 518, 521, 544; fears Hanumān, 481–83;—Rāma and army will be unable to cross the ocean, 495;—Rāma will make love to other women, 478;—Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa have been killed, 477; fears of, 474–75, 477–78; fire does not burn, 516, 710; fire ordeal (agniparikṣā) of, 15, 17, 708, 710–11, 793; foretells destruction of Laṅkā, 474;—destruction of Rāvana, 330, 474; foster daughter of Janaka, 11, 21, 118, 708; as foundling, 11, 21, 118, 843; gives birth to Lava and Kuśa, 17, 813; gives Hanumān hair ornament, 56, 494;—message for Rāma, 496–97;—pearl..
Sitā (continued)

violence, 273;—tests true feelings of,
164; vows to annihilate abductor of Sitā,
511; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa rescue, from
Virādhā, 267; Rāmdyana as Great Tale of,
3, 57; Rāvana abducts (see Sitā: abduction
of, by Rāvana this entry);—approaches in
guise of ascetic, 13, 314–17;—falls at feet of,
521;—gives ultimatum to, 468, 521;
—hears history of, 316–17;—offers,
sovereignty over Laṅkā, 328;—praises
beauty of, 315–16;—refuses to give back,
563, 570, 572;—reveals identity to, 317;
—reveals true form to, 319–20;—shows
Laṅkā to, 328;—takes, to Laṅkā, 327;
—terrifies, by violent approach, 674;
—threatens, 330, 468–69;—visits, in
aśoka grove, 463–70;—woos, 320; 328–29,
465–66; Rāvana’s wives encourage, 468;
rebukes rākṣasa women, 471–74;—Rāma,
163, 707–8;—Rāvana, 467–68;—Rāvana
for abduction, 325–26;—recounts crow
episode, 492–93;—her history to Hanu-
man, 481–82; reduced to tears by Rāma’s
cruel words, 707; refuses Hanumān’s
offer of rescue, 14, 490–92;—Hanumān’s
request to kill rākṣasa women, 704;
—Rāvana’s advances, 467;—to eat during
captivity, 422;—to touch any male other
than Rāma, 491; regrets refusing Hanu-
man’s offer to rescue, 674;—declared Rāma’s
accusations, 707–8;—Rāvana’s advances,
317–18, 319; reviles and warns Rāvana,
317–19, 325–26, 329–30, 467–69; as role
model, 22, 42; rumors about, 17, 792,
795, 800;—Rāma hears, 792;—Rāma
tells brothers of, 792; Sampāti informs
southwestern search party of location of,
14, 24, 418–20; Sārāma aids, 33, 568–70;
sees Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa wounded, 587;
silk shawl of, 326, 357; southern search
party, with Hanumān, will find, 409;
sons of Lava and Kuśa, 10, 19, 813;
Sugrīva dispatches monkeys to search
for, 13, 402–7;—instructs Hanumān to
find, 406; Śūrpanakāḥ attacks, 12, 285;
—describes, to Rāvana, 301; Sutīkṣa
directs, to visit ashrams of Agastyā,
276–79; takes Rāma’s signet ring from
Hanumān, 14, 487;—Rāma’s signet ring
from Hanumān, recalled, 522; tells
Anasūyā about birth and marriage,
262; Hanumān crow episode, 492–93;
—Hanumān of Rāma’s exile and her
abduction, 481–82;—story of sword-
wielding ascetic, 272; thinks Hanumān
is an illusion, 481–82;—is Rāvana, 482;
tours Citrakūṭa with Rāma, 232–34;
Trijatā reassures, 589;—tells dream
to, 475–77; from Laṅkā to Ayodhya in
Puspaka with Rāma, 715–16; truth-act
of, 19, 513–14, 843;—Hanumān, unburnt
through, 513–14; urges compassion for
the wicked as well as the good, 704;
—Rāma to abjure violence, 272; Uttara-
kāṇḍa refers to ordeal by fire of, 793;
Vālmiki shelters and consoles, 17,
797–98; Vedavati reinarnates as, 21–22,
753–54; Vibhiṣaṇa advises Rāvana to
return, 547–48;—enters inner apart-
ments of Rāvana to find, 705;—brings,
to Rāma, 705–6;—conveys Rāma’s in-
struction to, 705;—declares the killing
of, to be illusion, 660;—has Sitā mount
panalquin, 705;—orders passage of,
cleared of moneys, apes and rākṣasas,
705–6;—orders, come in full view
of the public, 706; visits Agastyā,
276–79;—Agastyā’s brother, 275–76;
—Śārabhaṅga, 268;—Sutīkṣa’s ashram,
269–71, 274–75; wants Rāma and Lakṣ-
maṇa to discard weapons, 272; warns
Rāma of perils of violence, 271–72;
—Rāvana of Rāma’s vengeance, 468;
wears barkcloth garments, 170–71;
welcomes Rāvana in guise of an ascetic,
316; wishes Rāma would renounce king-
ship for ascetic life, 272;—to accompany
Rāma into exile, 11, 161–64;—to see
Rāma, while unbathe, 705; wives of
Daśaratha welcome, 128; wonders why
Rāma has not rescued her, 474–75; words of
Rāma wound, 707

Śīva (Bhava, Hara, Mahādeva, Mahēśvara,
Paśupati, Rudra, Śambhu, Śhāṇu), 11, 16,
29, 96, 126, 732, 733, 736, 833–34, 837,
passim; asceticism of, 89; asks gods who
will bear his semen, 88; austerities of,
89; bow of, 117–19, 127;—Rāma breaks,
11, 13, 119;—unstrung by Viṣṇu, 127;
burns Rāma, 76–77; checks fall of
Ganges, 95; crushes Rāvana’s arms
under mountain, 752; denies god’s
request to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735;
“Destrayer” as part of Trimūrti, 35;
fights Viṣṇu, 127; friendship of, with
Kubera, 748;—with Rāvana, 30, 752;
gender transformation of, 833; gives
bow to Devarāta, 127;—Daśāgriva the
name “Rāvana,” 752; gods take refuge
with, 735; grants boon of manhood to
Ila, 837;—to Hanumān, 786;—Ila any
boon but manhood, 834;—boons to
Indrajit, 764;—knowledge of weapon-
spells to Viśvāmitra, 107;—lance as boon to Madhu, 808, 811;—boons to Sukeśa, 732–33; Kubera pleases, 748; lance of Lavaṇa returns to, 817; lord of Umā, 736; marries Pārvatī, 88; partial to Sukeśa, 735–36; pleased with āśvamedha of Ila, 837; presents heavenly spirit of Daśaratha to Rāma, 711; presses down Śaravana with big toe, 752; promises the gods woman would bring about his destruction, 678; Rāma breaks bow of, 11, 13, 119;—compared to, 292, 298, 455, 647, passim; Rāvana lifts up mountain, sitting on, 752; worships liṅga of, 776; releases Ganges into Lake Bindu, 95; semen of, generates Kārttikeya, 88; story of marriage of, and Pārvatī, 87–88; story of, and Pārvatī and Ila/Ilā, 833–34; tells gods to seek refuge with Viṣṇu, 735–36;—Rāma to perform āśvamedha, 711; thanks Rāma for ridding world of Rāvana, 711; weapon-spells of, 626, 684, 764, 758 size of Hanumān. See Hanumān: size of, changeable

Skanda (Mahāsena), 158, 740, 833; Agni as father of, 560; birth of, 88–90; etymology of name of, 90; Śrāvaṇa birthplace of, 751; wielder of the javelin, 740

sky: fifth path in, that of vultures, 419; first path in, that of kuliṅgas, 419; fourth path in, that of falcons, 419; highest path in, that of sons of Vinata, 419; second path in, that of crows, 419; sixth path in, that of haṃsas, 419; third path in, that of krauṇics, kites, and ospreys, 419

sleep: of Kumbhakarna, 31, 610, 744, 747 śloka, 55; etymology of word, 55; type of meter, 8, 55; type of verse, 8, 55, 391; word for poetry, 55

social classes (varṇas): in Ayran society, 40–41

social status: of Guha, 41; of Śabari, 41

Solar Dynasty (Śūryavamśa), 25, 36. See also genealogy: of Iksvākus

Soma (moon god), 36, 158, 251, 276, 307, 709, 830, 839; asham of, 404; Budha son of, 835–36; Dadhimukha son of, 564; Purūravas grandson of, 836; Śiśira weapon-spell of, 80

Somadā (gandharva woman): mother of Brahmadatta, 86–87

Somagiri (mountain in northern ocean), 405

Somavamśa (Lunar Dynasty), 36 son(s): of Aditi, 97–98, 280, 744 (see also Aditi; āditya(s)); of brahman, death of, 18, 820;—restored to life, 18, 823; of Diti, 97–98, 280, 744, 760, 833 (see also dāitya(s); Diti); lack of, of Daśaratha, 10, 81; of Rāma (see Kuśa; Lava); of Sagara, 90–96; of Sītā (see Kuśa; Lava); of Vinatā, that of, highest path in sky, 419

Śoṇā (river). See Māgadhī

southern quarter: Aṅgada, leader of search party of, 27, 400, 407; description of, 400–402; southern search party searches, 409–411; Sugriva dispatches southern search party to, 400–402, 407

southern search party: adventures of, 13–14;—Hanumān narrates to 413; Aṅgada exhots, 410;—leader of, 27, 400, 407; decide to fast to death, 14, 414, 417–18;—to return to cave, 414; dejection of, 410–11, 416; despondency of, 417, 423, 425; encounter of, with Swayamprabhā, 411–14; enters cave, 411; exhaustion of, 411–13, 413; fails find Sītā, 409; kills asura, 409–10; monkeys of, 411; reaches southern shore of ocean, 423; Sampāti desires, as food, 416;—informs, of location of Rāvana and Sītā, 14, 24, 418–20; search southern quarter, 409–11; seeks refuge with Swayamprabhā, 413; Sugriva dispatches to southern quarter, 400–402, 407; Swayamprabhā rescues, from cave, 413

spies of Rāvana. See Śardūla; Sāraṇa; Śuka śṝḍḍha rites, 213, 250, 275, 276

Śrāvati: Rāma founds, for Lava, 852

Śrī (goddess of royal fortune or beauty), 4, 69, 216, 376–77, 591, 733, 734, 740, 741, 797; Danu son of, 355; Sītā compared to, 129, 177, 190, 261, 315, 333, 460, 466, 544, 570, 752, 705

Śrīvatasa mark: Rāma as Viṣṇu bears, 709

Śṛgavapura: Guha lord of, 182, 256

Śrutakirti: marries Śatrughna, 123–25

śṛuti, “what was heard,” 39


Śtānu. See Śiva

Śṭhūla-kṣa (rākṣasa general): Rāma fights and kills, 291–93

Śṭhūlasiras (ascetic): curses Kabandha, 344 stratagems of kings, 353

straw: Brahmadeo’s power in, 493; Sītā places, between herself and Rāvana, 467 structure of Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa. See Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa: structure of

Subāhu (monkey), 580
Subéha (rākṣasa): obstructs Viṣvāmitra’s sacrifice 82–83; Rāma kills, 10, 33, 83; Rāvaṇa commands to obstruct sacrifices, 74; Viṣvāmitra complains, obstructing sacrifice, 73

Subēhu (son of Śatrughna): Śatrughna conscribes, in Madhurā, 852

Śubhra (gandharva lord), 402

Śudāmana (counselor): of Janaka, 121

Śudāmana (weapon-spell): of Tvāṣṭṛ, 80

Śudārśana (elephant): born in Airāvata’s lineage, 530; Mahodara mounts, 630

Śudhanvan: Janaka kills, 123

Śūdra(s) (social class), 18, 19, 40, 41, 54, 60, 199, 402, 477, 822–24; born from the feet of Manu, 280; forbidden to practice austerities in tretā yuga, 822; in list of four social classes, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; role of, in the yugas, 821; Śambūka as (see Śambūka)

Sugriva: addicted to sensual pleasures of, 384; adoptive son of Śaśāra, 350, 563, 624, 786; advice of Hanumān to, 384–85, 389–90; alarmed at Lakśmaṇa’s anger, 390; alliance of, with Rāma, 13, 25, 30, 53, 56, 356–58, 364, 486, 716; sanctified by fire, 356–58 (see also Sugriva: friendship with Rāma); created by gods on Rāma’s behalf, 787; Aṅgada announces Lakśmaṇa’s arrival to, 389; fears imprisonment by, 414, 415–16; Aṅgada and, place Vālīn on bier, 378; apologizes to Lakśmaṇa, 393; assaults Kumbhakarṇa with a mountain, 624; assembles monkeys, 385; assures Vībhīṣaṇa he will be rākṣasa king, 591; blocks Vālīn in cave, 360–61; recalled, 408; challenges Kumbhakarṇa, 624; Rāma to split sāla trees, 53, 363–64; Rāma to split sāla trees, recalled, 366; Vālīn to battle, 364–66; character analysis of, 25; claims army can leap over the ocean, 537; comforts Rāma, 359, 530–31; commander of monkey army, 398, 540–41, passim; conciliates Lakśmaṇa, 393; conscripts Aṅgada crown prince, 380–81; consecration of, in kingship, 360, 379–80; counselors set, in Vālīn’s place, 786; delays fulfillment of promise, 13; departs from Kīṣkindhā with Lakśmaṇa 395; derelict in duty, 387–88; describes Vālīn, 362; description of abode of, 390–91; de-throned by his brother, Vālīn, 485; dispatches monkey army in all four directions, 13, 398–402, 404–7; dwells at Pampā and Mount Rṣyāmūka, 346–47, 349–50; enmity of, with Vālīn, 13, 25, 359–63, 408, 787; enters abode of Lakśmaṇa, 391; enumerates monkeys to Rāma, 396; exhorts Rāma to abandon grief, 537; fears Rāma and Lakśmaṇa, 353, 359, 716; Vālīn, 346, 349, 353, 359; fights and kills Kumbha, 649–50; Praghasa (rākṣasa), 581; fights Kumbha, 649–50; Mahodara, 681–82; Rāvaṇa, 604–5; Vālīn 53, 56, 364, 368; Virūpākṣa, 680–81; friendship of, with Rāma, 354, 356, 358, 364, 371, 549–50, 590, 725 (see also Sugriva: alliance of, with Rāma); friendship of, with Hanumān, 787; gagapusī garland of, as identifying sign, 25, 364, 366; Lakśmaṇa gives, 364–65; golden necklace of, 561; grief of, 359–61, 379, 408; Hanumān counselor of, 27; emissary of, 510; to assist against Vālīn, 783, 787; introduces Rāma and Lakśmaṇa to, 356; harsh nature of, 414; holds fly whisk for Rāma’s consecration, 724–25; hostility of Vālīn with, 787; infers success of southern search party, 529; infracts punishment, 410, 414, 416, 425, 452, 528; instructs monkeys to search the directions, 13, 398–406; Šatabali to search foothills of Kailāsa, 405; Kabandha tells Rāma about, 345–46; Kaikēyī embraces, 722; kills Kumbha, 650; Mahodara, 682; Virūpākṣa, 680–81; Kumbhakarṇa carries off, 624; Lakśmaṇa directed by Rāma to find, 350; reviles, 391–92; threatens, 392; Lakśmaṇa’s anger toward, 387–89, 390, 392; lives on Rṣyāmūka, 342, 346, 347, 349, 350, 352, 358, 485; lord of apes, 384, 486; lord of monkeys, 379, 393, 398, 485, passim; makes pact with Rāma to kill Vālīn, 486; meeting of, with Lakśmaṇa, 391; with Rāma, 13, 356; with Rāma on Mount Prasraṇa [Mālavyāv], 395–96; misfortune of, 357, 359; mistreatment of, by Vālīn, 354; mounts elephant in procession for Rāma’s consecration, 724; enmity of, with Vālīn, 13, 26, 355–63, 408; offers funerary libations for Vālīn of, 360; orders Hanumān to meet Rāma and Lakśmaṇa, 353–54; Hanumān to summon monkeys, 394; monkeys to assemble, 393; monkeys to storm Laṅkā with torches, 645; Nīla to assemble monkey army, 385; pardons monkeys for devastation of Madhuvana, 529; portrayed as cruel, impetuous, cowardly, and as a libertine, 25; praises Hanumān, 529;

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
—Kumbha, offers him respite, 649; promises Rāma to search for and recover Sītā, 13, 357; qualities of, 25; Rāma exhorts, to aid in search for Sītā, 358; Rāma exhorts to search for Sītā, 358; gives, gold diadem, 726;—gives, tribute given to him by kings, 788;—invites to āsvamedha, 838;—places his palace at disposal of, 735;—praises, 789;—sends back to Kiskindhā, 788–89;—sends Lakṣmana to exhort, 387;—unable to find and recover Sītā without, help of, 25; Rāma's anger at, 386–87;—reassures Rāma of success in mission, 537–38;—that Sītā has been found, 531;—receives Vibhiṣaṇa, 575; reconciles with Lakṣmana, 393;—receives wife Rumā, 381; requests help from Rāma, 355, 396; sees destruction of Madhuvana, 528–29;—send Hanumān to meet Rāma and Lakṣmana, 353–54;—monkeys to search for Sītā, 13;—monkeys to the four oceans for Rāma's consecration, 725;—slaughters principal rākṣasas, 680;—smashed to ground, escapes, 626;—son of Rākṣarajas, 346, 350;—son of Śūrya, 71, 346, 355;—succeeds Rākṣarajas as king, 786;—summoned to āsvamedha, 838;—Śūrya natural father of, 27, 71, 355;—Tārā coveted by, 384;—Tārā defends, 392–93;—and, offer funeral libations for, 379;—Vālmikī abducts wife of, 361;—exiles, 11, 25, 345–46, 361;—advises Aṅgada to be submissive to, 376;—elder brother of, and rightful heir, 26, 353, 360;—gives, golden garland, 376;—gives, sovereignty of monkeys, 376;—more powerful than 26;—routes, 364;—takes wife of, 359;—Vālmikī's anger at, 360–61;—waits on brahmins assembled for āsvamedha, 838;—wife of, 371, 374, 381, 391, 392, 408, 416, 454;—wounds Kumbhakarna with fangs and claws, 625 suicide: by fasting, 454; by hanging, 454;—by poison, 454; by self-immolation, 454;—by weapons, 454;—Hanumān contemplates, 455;—Rāma threatens, 150;—Sītā contemplates, 473–74, 477–78;—threatens, 163–64, 314;—threatens hanging as a means of, 314, 478 Śūka (minister of Rāvana), 443, 749, 776–78;—claims Rāvana is victorious, 754;—monkeys capture, 556;—Rāma releases, 556;—Rāvana deploys to spy, 555–56;—rebukes and humiliates, 562;—reports to Rāvana, 556–57;—spies for Rāvana, 777;—takes on the form of monkey, 556 Śukesā: birth of, 732;—Devavati wife of, 733;—Mālin, Mālyāvān, Śumālin sons of, 733; Śiva grants boons to, 733;—sons of, attack the world of the gods, 736–37;—dwell in Lāṅkā with their followers, 734;—gods ask Viṣṇu to kill, 735;—Harry gods and asuras, 733–35;—much more powerful than Rāvana, 740;—none but Nārāyaṇa capable of killing, 740;—practice fearsome austerities, 733;—receive boons from Brahmā, 733;—request Viśvakarman to build mansion for, 733–74 (see also Mālin; Mālyāvān; Śumālin) Śuketu (son of Nandivardhana): king of the Iśvāku lineage, 122 Śuketu (yakṣa): father of Tātakā, 78 Śūkra (preceptor of the demons). See Uśanas Kāyya Sumāgadhī (river). See Māgadhī Sumālin: austerities of, 733;—battles gods, 739–40;—boons of, 733, 735–36;—Devavati mother of, 733;—Dhūrākṣa son of, 734;—emerges from Rāṣṭāla, 744;—flees to Lāṅkā, 739–40;—Kaikasi daughter of, 734;—Kumbhāṇasi (1) daughter of, 734;—leaves Rāṣṭāla, 740;—Savitra fights and kill, 769;—sends Kaikasi to ask Viśravas to marry her, 741;—serpent-chariot of, 769;—urges Rāvana to seize Lāṅkā from Kubera, 744. See also Mālin; Mālyāvān; Sukēśa:—sons of, attack the world of the gods Sumantra (minister and charioteer of Daśaratha), 52, 56, 60–62, 64, 66, 147, 170–71, passim;—brings Bharata back from forest, 253;—consoles Kausalyā, 195;—Śatrughna, 214;—Daśaratha orders, to bring Rāma, 133–34, 147;—delivers Rāma's message to Daśaratha, 192–94;—Bharata to find Rāma, 218, 219, 232;—Rāma into exile, 173–75;—Sītā to forest, 794–95;—fetches Rāma to Daśaratha, 133–34, 147–48, 168;—grief of, 185, 191–92, 195;—invites participants to Daśaratha's sacrifice, 65;—joins brothers in forest, 242;—Kaikēyī orders, to bring Rāma, 146;—Lakṣmana extols Rāma's virtues to, 179;—Rāma dismisses, 184–87 Sumati (1), 99–100;—mother of Sagara's 60,000 sons, 91;—wife of Sagara, 90 Sumati (2):—son of Kākatūṣha, 99–100 Sumeru (mountain): boon of, 763 Sumitrā, 230, 238, 243, 473, 477, 488, 589, 590, 711, 712, 714, passim;—and the death of Daśaratha, 201–2;—consoles Kausalyā, 177;—Daśaratha gives half of a half of porridge to, 70;—gives remaining porridge to, 70;—departs for forest to bring Rāma back, 219;—eats celestial porridge, 70;—follows Kausalyā to heaven, 845;—gives
Sumitrā (continued)
birth to two sons, Lakṣmaṇa and Śatrughna, 71; instructs Lakṣmaṇa on conduct, 173; Kausalyā and, go to meet Rāma, 721; laments, 211; learns that Rāma will be consecrated as prince regent, 135–36; meets Bharadvāja, 230; meets with Rāma on Mount Citrakūṭa, 243–44; mother of Lakṣmaṇa, 22, 52, 71, 172, passim; Rāma respectfully salutes, 723, 725; receives new brides, 128; Śatrughna respectfully salutes, 811
sun: burns Sampāti’s wings, 418; grows dim during battle between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 697; Hanumān tries to devour, 426–27, 783; Játyāus and Sampāti fly into, 418, 421–22; wings of Sampāti burned by, 418, 422. See also Śurya
Śunahśeṇa: story of, 113–14
Śundarākāṇḍa, 429–536; bija (heart) of Rāmāyana, 15; printed separately from Rāmāyana, 15; prognosticative text, 15; starting point for recitation of Rāmāyana, 15; synopsis of, 14–15
Sundari (wife of Mālayavān), 734
sun god. See Śurya
Suparna: in Sagara story, 94. See also Garuḍa
Supārśva (rāksa): dissuades Rāvaṇa from killing Sītā, 674–75
Supārśva (vulture): Sampāti scolds, 423; son of Sampāti, 419, 420; witnesses abduction of Sītā, 420
Supreme Being. See Viṣṇu
Suptaghnā (rāksa): fights Rāma, 581
Surabhī (Surabhi) (wish-fulfilling cow), 210, 228; children of, 280; grievances for her calves, 210–11; Rāvaṇa observes, 761; supplies milk for Ocean of Milk, 761
Surasā: Kadrū, sister of, 280–81; Krodhavāsā mother of, 280; mother of serpents, 380, 434, 519; obstructs Hanumān’s passage, 434–35;—re-called, 519–20
Śūrasenā (city): Śatrughna renames Madhupurī as, 817
Śūrasenas: country in northern quarter, 404
Surāṣṭra, 402, 284–85
Śūpānaḵhā, 12, 29, 32, 33; admonishes Rāvaṇa, 299–300; appeals to Rāvaṇa’s duty as king, 299–300; attacks Sītā, 285; birth of, 28–29, 741; demands Rāma’s death, 301; describes Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sītā to Rāvaṇa, 301; description of, 284, 741; goes to Laṅkā, 298; grief of, 288; inflames Rāvaṇa’s passion for Sītā, 301; Kaikasi mother of, 29, 741; Lakṣmaṇa rejects and mutilates, 12, 285–86; lives in Danḍaka forest, 764–65; mutilation of, 32, 52, 56, 285–86;—explained to Khara, 286; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa tease, 285; Rāvaṇa marries, to Vidyujiṣiva, 746;—questions, 300;—sends, to Danḍaka forest, 764;—kills husband of, 29, 763; reports death of Khara and Dūṣaṇa to Rāvaṇa, 52, 299; representations of, in Rāma story, 33; reproaches Rāvaṇa for death of husband, 763; role of, in epic, 33; seduces Lakṣmaṇa, 285;—Rāma, 12, 33, 284–85; taunts Khara taunted by, 288; tells Khara about death of fourteen rākṣasas, 288–89;—about Rāma killing rākṣasas, 288; tells Rāma about Khara and Dūṣaṇa, 284; Viṣṇavas father of, 28–29, 741;—curses, 33, 741
Śūrya (sun god) (Āditya, Mārtanda, Vivasvan), 26, 36, 429, 432, 569, 608, 630, 640, 698, 716, 735, 780 784; does not burn Hanumān, 432; father of Ṝkaṣarajas, 346; father of Sugrīva, 27, 71, 355; grants boons to Hanumān, 432, 783, 786;—to Mount Sumeru, 403, 783; Hanumān invokes, 429; Hanumān mistakes for fruit, 783; lord of cows, 650; Rāhu chariot of, 784; refrains from burning Hanumān, 783; son of Kaśyapa, 251; weapon-spells of, 639, 685. See also sun
Śūryabhāṇu (yakṣa): disappears, pulverized, 750; pierces Rāvaṇa, 749
Śūryavāṁśa. See Solar Dynasty
Suṣena (monkey), 440; member of the southern search party, 400, declares prowess in jumping, 424
Suṣena (monkey troop leader; father of Tārā), 390, 563, 573; passim; arrival of in Kiṣkindhā, 397; battles and kills Vidyuṁmaṇī, 581–82; father of Tārā, 402, 580, 781; fights and kills Vidyuṁmaṇī, 581–82; has Lakṣmaṇa inhale aroma of the healing herbs, 27, 688; leader of western search party, 402, 404, 407, 409; physician of monkeys, 27; reassures Rāma that Lakṣmaṇa is not dead, 687; sends Hanumān once more for healing herbs, 688; tells monkeys about healing herbs on the mountains Candra and Droṇa, 592
stītās (bards), 35
Sutikṣṣa (ascetic): ashram of, 270, 274; authorities of, 270; directs Rāma, to Agastya and Agastya’s brother, 275; Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sītā visit, 52, 56, 269–71, 274–75; Śrābahāṅga directs Rāma to, 268
Suvela (mountain): Rāma encamps on, with chief monkeys, 574–76; Rāma’s army encamps near, 563,–64
Suyajña (minister of Daśaratha), 64
Suyajña (son of Vasiṣṭha), 165–66, 725
Śvayamprabhā: daughter of Merusāvarga, 412; description of, 411; fasting of, 412; friendship of, with Hemā, 412; Hanumān tells, of search party’s adventures, 413; history of, 412; questions Hanumān, 412; rescues southern search party from cave, 413; southern search party seeks refuge with, 413
Śvetākṣa (guardian elephant [diggaja]), 280 sword: Agastya gives, to Rāma, 278; story of ascetic and, 272
Śyandikā (river), 181
synopsis: of Aranyakāṇḍa, 12–13; of Ayodhyākāṇḍa, 11–12; of Bālakāṇḍa, 9–11; of Kiskindhākāṇḍa, 13–14; of Sundararakāṇḍa, 14–15; of Uttararakāṇḍa, 16–20; of Yuddhakāṇḍa, 15–16
taking on form at will. See shape-shifting
Takṣa (son of Bharata): consecration of, in Takṣaśila, 846
Takṣaka: Rāvana conquerer, 299, 545—abducts wife of, 299
Takṣaśila (city): Bharata founds, 846–47
Tamasā (river), 179; ashram of Bharadvāja at, 54; citizens of Ayodhyā turn back at, 180; Rāma and Sītā spend first night in forest at, 179; Vālmiki’s ashram on banks of, 54–55, 794
Tāmasa (weapon-spell), Rāvana uses, against monkeys, 683; Viśvāmitra gives, to Rāma, 80
tāmasī (power of illusion), 764
Tapanā (rākṣasa): Gaja fights and kills, 581
Tāra (monkey troop leader), 365, 390, 622, 411, 415, 787, 788; advises Vālin, 367, 374, 377; arrives in Kiskindhā, 397; exhorts monkeys, 373; father of Tārā, 781; fights and kills Kumbhahanu, 601; member of southern search party, 407, 409; minister of Vālin, 781; number of troops of, 397; participates in Vālin’s funeral, 378; suggest monkeys return to cave, 414–15; tells Rāvana that Vālin is gone, 781
Tārā (wife of Vālin) 372; accepts Lakṣmaṇa’s advice, 393; chief queen of Vālin, 363; daughter of Suṣeṇa, 376; daughter-in-law of Suṣeṇa, 798; Sugriva by, 392–93; duty of, toward Aṅgada, 375; fast of, aban-
doned, 377; fasting to death of, 375; foretells future, 376; gives blessings and mantras for Vālin, 368; grief of, 373–77, 379; Hanumān consoles 375; hears information from Aṅgada, 367; instructs Aṅgada, 377; lament for Vālin of, 374, 376–77, 379; protector of monkeys and apes, 375; reader of portents, 376; rejects Hanumān’s advice, 375; Sugriva covets, 384; Tāra as father of, 781; Vālin as source of information of, 392; Vālin rejects advice of, 367–68; as widow, 374, 377
Tātākā, 10, 32; Agastya curses, 32–33, 78; boon of, 78; originally a yakṣa, 33, 78; daughter of Suketu, 78; forest of, 77–78; Mārica son of, 78; power of illusion of, 79; Rāma kills, 10, 79; wife of Sunda as yakṣa, 78
three-headed cobras, 75, 654
three-strides of Viṣṇu. See Viṣṇu: three strides of time. See cosmic cycles; cosmic eras; cyclical time; Dvāpara Yuga; Kali Yuga; Kṛta Yuga; Tretā Yuga; yuga(s)
Timidhvaja (an asura, also called, Śambara): Daśaratha kills, 141; Indra fights, 141; Rāma kills son of, 177. See also Śambara
Tiṣya: name of a degenerate yuga that comes about when unrighteousness eclipses righteousness, 571. See also Kali Yuga
Tiṣya constellation, 517
trees, golden. See inauspicious omens: golden trees presage death
Tretā Yuga, 18, 22, 754, 821, 824; Rāmāyaṇa takes place in, 38
Trijaṭā (rākṣasa woman), 587; assures Sītā that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are alive, 589; dream of, 475–76; reassures Sītā, 589; warns rākṣasa women to placate Sītā, 476
Trijata Gārgya (brahman): Rāma jokes with and gives cow to, 166
Trikūṭa (mountain) Laṅkā located on, 437, 538, 575, 715, 735
Trikūṭa (mountain), 583; Hanumān leaps onto, 437, 645; located on southern shore, 734; Rāvana goes to, 745. See also Lamba
Trimūrthān. See Trīshiras (2)
Trimūrtī, 34–35
Trīsaṅku: becomes candalā, 110–11; as constellation, 174, 541; curse of, 41; descendant of Iksavaku, 109; goes to heaven in bodily form, 122, 252; son of Pṛthu, 122, 252; story of his rise to heaven, 109–12; Vasiṣṭha purohit of, 109–10; Vasiṣṭha and sons refuses to sacrifice for, 109–10; Viśvāmitra performs sacrifice for, 111–12
Triśiras (rākṣasa troop leader) (1): attacks Rāma, 294; fights Rāma in Daṇḍaka, 291; Rāma fights and kills, 32, 52, 56, 294–95;—recalled, 300, 652, 677; Rāvana reports death of, to Mārica, 303; vows to kill Rāma, 294
Triśiras (rākṣasa troop leader) (2): also called Trimūrdhan, 633–34; exhorts Rāvana, 629; fights Āṅgada, 633; Hanumān fights and kills, 634–35; recalled, 640, 715; Kumbhakarna paternal uncle of, 628; leads rākṣasas into battle, 629–30; son of Rāvana, 630; strikes Hanumān with sword, 634; vows to kill Rāvana’s enemies, 629
Trṇabindu, ashram of, 729–30; austerities of, 729; daughter of (see Trṇabindu’s daughter); recognizes curse of Pulastya, 730
Trṇabindu’s daughter: becomes pregnant, 729; gives birth to Viśravas, 730; Pulastya marries, 730; virtues of, of 30
truth-act: of Anaranya, 756; of Sītā, 19, 513–14, 843; of Vedavati, 753. See also oath; vow
Tumburu (king of gandharvas), 228; Bharadvāja invokes, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; cursed by Vaiśravāṇa, 266–67; passion of, for Rambhā, 267
turtle: eating of, by brahmans and kṣatriyas, 370
Tvāṣṭṛ (divine craftsman), 663; Bharadvāja invokes, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; Indra cuts off heads of son of, 635; Sudāmana divine weapon of, 80
Umā. See Pārvatī
universal destruction, fire of, 108, 116, 126, 388, 493, 504, 533, 606, 607, 624, 629, 637, 663, 678, 698, 762, 816, 832. See also cosmic destruction
unrighteousness (adharma), 5, 17, 20, 37, passim
Upendra. See Viśṇu
upodghāta (prologue) of Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa, 4, 6, 9–10, 51–58
Ūrmilā (gandharva woman), 85
Ūrmilā (wife of Laksmana), Janaka gives, to Laksmana, 123, 262; marriage of, 125; wives of Daśāratha welcome, 128
Urvaśi: Pururavas and, 319; story of, and Mitra and Varuṇa, 803–4
Uśanas Kāvyā (Bhārgava, Śukra, Uśanas) (preceptor of the demons and constellation) 412, 415, 715; anger of 763; Arajā daughter of, 827–28; ashram of, 827–28; ashram surrounds of, become Janaśṭhāna, 828; Bhārgava, 541, 805–6, 827–28; curses Daṇḍa, 828;—forest, 763;—curses Yayāti, 806, 807; Devayāṇi daughter of, 805–6; instructs dwellers in his ashram emigrate, 828; orders Arajā to remain near lake, 828; purohitas of asuras, 599;—of Daṇḍa, 827;—of rākṣasas, 764; spares area around lake from destruction, 828; tells Rāvana of Indrajit’s sacrifices, 764; Viśṇu kills mother of, 79; wealth of, 412
Utopian realm of “Rāmarājya”, 726–27
utpiḍā (unidentified organ), 472
Uttarakāṇḍa, 728–855; anomalous events in, 17; Brahmā instructs to listen to (Uttara), 844; categories of narrative material in, 16; cautionary tales in, 17; controversial episodes of, 16, 19; epilogue, 16–17; narrative of childhood of Hanumān in, 16; rājadharmā in, 16; reprise of Rāmāyana theme, 17; role of Agastyā in, 16–17, 19, 26, 29; synopsis of, 16–20; tells history of rākṣasas and Rāvana, 16; two bards (Lava and Kuśa) recite, 844; unusual features of, 19
Vaidehi. See Sītā
Vaijayanta (city): Nimi founds, 802; south of Ayodhyā, 141
vaikhānasas (class of ascetics), 268, 302, 303, 400, 405
Vaiśṇava form: of Rāma, 854
Vaiśṇava Hindus, 5n, 34
Vaiśṇava sacrifice: of Indra, 775; of Indrajit, 764
Vaiśṇava theology: dāśyabhāva in, 26
Vaiśṇava theme: of avatāras (incarnations), 38
Vaiśṇava tradition: Rāmāyana, as sacred text of, 4–5
Vaiśṇava works, 35
Vaiśravāṇa. See Kubera Vaiśravāṇa
vaiśya (social class), 40, 54, 60, 199, 822; born from the thighs of Manu, 280; in list of four social classes, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; role of, in the yugas, 821
Vaitarani (river): river of hell, 325
Vaivasvata (god of death), 111, 200–201, 321, 370, 376, 416, 475, 485, 604, 608, 640, 673, 820, 823; monkeys as sons of, 404;—Gaja, Gavākṣa, Gavaya, Śarabha, Gandhamādana, 564; Nārada goes to heaven with, 760; Rāvana fights, 757–60;—recalled. 613; Rāvana kills warriors
of, 758; Rāvana resolved to kill, 757; servants of, 644; son of Sūrya, 757. See also Dharmarāja; Kāla; Kṛṭānta; Manu; Mrtyu; Yama vājapeya sacrifice, 178, 764, 845, 853; of Rāma, 726; umbrella consecrated for, 853

vajra (decoration), 440

vajra (thunderbolt of Indra), 71, 199, 210, passim; Hanumān invulnerable to, 786; Indra breaks Hanumān’s jaw with, 426, 785;—cuts off mountains’ wings with, 433, 519;—kills Vṛtra with, 832;—smashes Diti’s fetus with, 99;—strikes Kumbhakarṇa with, 813

vajra (weapon), 80, 289, 441

Vajra (weapon-spell), 80, 108

Vajrādasmśtra (rākṣasa), 443, 546, 547; Rāma pierces, 583

Vajrāyālā: wife of Kumbhakarṇa and grand-daughter of Vairocana, 746–47

Vajramuṣṭi (rākṣasa): son of Mālyavān 734; Mainda fights and kills, 581–82

vālakhiyaśas (class of ascetics), 104, 268, 302–3, 400

Vālin: abducts Sugriva’s wife, 361–62; acknowledges Rāma as having rightful royal authority, 26; adoptive son of Rksarajas, 786; alliance of, with Rāvana, 26, 782; Aṅgada cremates, 379;—grieves death of, 379;—salutes, 377; Aṅgada son of (see Aṅgada); anger of, at Sugriva, 360–61; apes seek protection of, 377; arrow in, pulled out by Nila, 377; banishes Sugriva, 13, 25, 345–46, 361; becomes like a brother to Rāvana, 782; begs forgiveness from Rāma, 372; captures Rāvana, 26, 781–82; challenges Dundubhi to fight, 362–63; character synopsis of, 25–26; chases Sugriva around the entire earth, 408; confesses sins, 372, 375; cremation of, 375, 378–79; death of, 368–76; death of, as punishment, 371–72; description of, by Sugriva, 362; discourse of, on righteousness and statecraft, 369–70; elder brother and rightful heir, 26, 353, 360; enmity of, with Māyāvin, son of Dundubhi, 360–61;—with Sugriva of, 13, 26, 355–363, 408, 787; exiles Sugriva, 11, 25, 361; fights and kills Dundubhi Māyāvin, 360–63;—recalled, 408; fights Sugriva, 13, 25 53, 56, 364, 368; flies to four oceans with Rāvana in armpit, 26, 782; freed from sin by punishment, 372; funerary libations for, by Sugriva, 360; funerary rites of, 378–79; gives Sugriva golden garland, 376;—sovereignty of monkeys, 376; golden necklace of, 368–69;—Indra gives, 363; golden garland of, 376, 781; Himālaya tells, Dundubhi is fit opponent, 636; hurls Dundubhi’s body a league away, 363; instructions of, at death, to Aṅgada, 376; killing of, by Rāma unjust, 370;—controversial, 14, 20, 26;—Rāma justifies, 370–72; kills Dundubhi, 360–61; Kabandha tells Rāma about, 345–46; Mātaṅga curses, 363–64;—recalled, 408; monkeys seek protection of, 377; more powerful than Sugriva, 26, 359; orders Sugriva to wait at cavern, 360–61; Rāma consoles, 372; Rāma fails to shoot, 364;—kills, 21, 26, 53, 56, 368, 418, 460, 511;—shoots, from ambush, 13, 25, 56, 364, 368;—vows to kill, 13, 25, 53, 359, 361–62, 486; Rāvana attacks and is defeated by, 16, 26, 27, 30, 781–82;—chases after, 481–82; rebukes Rāma for killing, 26, 369–70; reconciles with Sugriva, 375; rejects Tārī’s advice, 367–68; Rksarajas adoptive father of, 346, 786;—makes, king of monkeys, 786; routs Sugriva, 364; Rumā, daughter-in-law of, 371; sandhyā rites of, 781–82; slayer of dānavas, 373; source of Tārī’s information, 392; scatters blood on Mātaṅga’s asham, 363; Sugriva blocks, in cave, 360, 361, 408;—fears, 346, 349, 353, 359, 361;—makes alliance with Rāma to kill, 13, 25, 30, 53, 56, 356–58, 364, 486, 716;—mistreats, 354;—narrates history of conflict with, 13, 53, 358–61;—returns kingdom to, 361;—younger brother of, 353; takes Sugriva’s wife, 25, 359, 361; travels the world in fear of, 361; Tārī minister of, 731; Tārī laments for, 374, 376–77, 379;—says blessings and mantras for, 368;—wife of, 372; son of Indra, 71, 345, 368; violator of righteousness, 370–71; wives lament for, 374–75

Vālmiki, passim; agrees to Rāma’s request to have Sītā publicly prove her innocence, 841; ascetic, 51, 842; asham of, 6, 7, 10, 13, 17–19, 32, 38, 40, 794–98, 800, 812–14, 818–19; asks Nārada if there is a truly great man in the world, 9, 51; austerities of, 797, 842; author of Rāmāyaṇa, 3; Bharadvāja as disciple of, 54–55; birthday of, restricted holiday, 5; Brahmā grants poetic inspiration to, 4, 9, 39, 55;—instructs, to compose Rāmāyaṇa, 55;—praises composition of, 844; visits, 9, 55; brings Sītā to Rāma’s aśvamedha, 841–42; composes Rāmāyaṇa, 6, 9–10,
Vālmiki (continued)
55–57, 855; consoles Sītā, 798; contemporary with epic characters and actor in epic drama, 38; creates sloka (poetry), 9, 55–56; curses hunter (Niṣāda) in metrical form, 9, 54–55; disciples (bards) of, sing the Uttarārādhāna, 845;—identify, as author of the poem, 841;—recite Rāmāyaṇa, 57–58, 839–41, 844;—recite sloka, 55;—Rāma acknowledges as sons, 842;—Rāma recognizes, as Sītā's sons, 841 (see also Kuśa; Lava); endowed with divine vision, 39; filled with pity at killing of krauṇca bird, 54; First Poet (Ādikāva), 4; gives amulets to Lava and Kuśa, 813; grief (soka) of, becomes metrical and musical verse (sloka), 55; hears story of Rāma from Nārada, 9, 51–54; ignorant of Rāma story prior to Nārada's visit, 38; instructs disciples to perform Rāmāyaṇa, 839–40; metrical structure of course of, 54–55; names Lava and Kuśa, 813; Nārada narrates synopsis of Rāmāyaṇa to, 51–54; portrays Rāma, Laksmaṇa, Bharata, and Sītā as ideal role models, 20, 22–23; proclaims Sītā—26–27;—Kuśa of, 18, 813; suggests but does not perform, 844; Śaiva innocence, 797; Rāma instructs Laksmaṇa to abandon Sītā at ashram of, 794, 796, 800;—requests, to have the Uttarārādhāna performed, 844; Śatrughna stays over at ashram of, 18, 812, 818; sends disciples to recite Rāmāyaṇa, 839–42; shelters Sītā, 17, 797–98; son of Pracetas (Prācetas), 840, 842; sons of Sītā and Rāma born in ashram of, 18, 813; suggests but does not explicitly describe Rāvana as devotee of Śiva, 30; teaches Rāmāyaṇa to Lava and Kuśa, his disciples, 6, 10, 57 (see also Kuśa; Lava; Vālmiki: disciples (bards) of, sing the Uttarārādhāna (kānda)); tells story of Mitrāśaḥa Saudāśa, 812–13; testifies to legitimacy of Rāma and Sītā's twin sons, 842; testifies to Sītā's innocence, 842; witnesses killing of krauṇca, 54; world of, 34

Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa: alternative titles of, 3; Brahāma asks Rāma to hear, 844; cautionary tales in, 17, 18, 24, 41; characters of, animals, 24–25;—Bharata, 23;—construct of binary, 20;—Daśaratha, 23;—Hanumān, 26–27;—Indrajit, 31–32;—Kaikeyi, 24;—Kausalyā, 23–24;—Kumbhakarna, 31;—Laksmaṇa, 22;—rākṣasa women, 32–34;—Rāma, 20–21;—Rāvana, 28–30;—as role models, 5;—Śatrughna, 23;—Sītā, 21–22;—Sugriva, 25;—Vālin, 25–26;—Vibhīṣaṇa, 30–31; contested history of, 19; dating of, 3, 8, 34, 38; editions of, 7; emic history of, 34, 37–40; etic history of, 34; general overview of, 3–6; histories of, 34–41; as history, 5, 34–41, 37; history of, contested, 19;—differing perspectives of, 34; as literature poetic composition, 4, 41, 47; as literature, the First Poem (Ādikāva), 4; Mahābhārata and, as sister epics, 47;—comparison between, 20; manuscripts, sub-recensions of, 7; moral and ethical, dharmaśāstra and—struggle between dharma and adharma, 5, 20; narrative of, 8–9; recensions of, 7–9, 40, 44, 45; recitation of, 4, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41, 844;—by disciples (bards), 839–41;—by Lava and Kuśa, 57–58, 844;—parāyana (recitation), 15;—Śatrughna hears, 818–19; Sundarārādhāna as starting point for, 15; Vālmiki teaches to disciples, 6, 10;—versification of, 8; religious history of, 4–5, 34–35, 41; social vision of, 40–41; story of, 9–20; structure, upodghāta of, 4, 6, 9–10, 51–58; structure of, meta-narrative of, 4;—meters of, 8–9;—Sundarārādhāna as bija (heart) of, 15;—Uttarakānda as reprise of, 17; synopsis of, by Nārada, 51–54; text, history of, 4, 8, 44; structure of, 8–9; text of, 6–9;—Baroda critical edition of, 6, 8;—books (kāṇḍas) of, 9;—size of, 3; textual tradition of, manuscripts of, 7–8;—perishability of manuscripts of, 7; themes and motifs of, 19, 24–26;—curse as, 16; discomfort, 19; titles of, 3–4; translation(s) of, based on various editions, 7;—conventions in, 45–47;—history of current, 44–45;—Princeton University Press, 6; worshiped by Brahāma, 855. See also Rāmāyaṇa
Vāmadeva (minister of Daśaratha), 64
Vāmadeva (priest of Daśaratha), 60, 120, 203, 255; Daśaratha instructs, to install Rāma as prince regent, 133
Vāmadeva (priest of Rāma), 725, 820–21, 837, 841
Vāmanā (apsaras), 228
Vāmanā (guardian elephant [diggaja]), 60, 776
Vāmanā (sage), 841
vāmanāvatāra (dwarf incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 81–82
vāṃśa(s) (royal lineage[s]), 35
vāṃśavali(s) (dynastic list[s]), 36
vānaras. See monkeys
Varāha (mountain): city of Prāggyotīṣa located on, 403
varṇa(s): See social classes
Varuṇa: and the apsaras Urvaśī, 803–4;—becomes a haṃsa, 754; grants boon to
hamsa, 755;—to Hanumān, 786; goes tomsual recital 762; Mahodara battles, and sons, 762; Rāma compared to, 304, 321; Rāma gives Viṣṇu’s bow to, 128; Rāvana battles sons and grandsons of, 761; refused sex by Urvaśī, 803–4;—regent of northern quarter, 402;—regent of western quarter, 402, 407; releases semen into pot, 804; story of Urvaśī and Mitra and, 803–4; Vasiṣṭha enters semen of Mitra and, 803; as world guardian, 731, 804 Vāsava. See Indra

Vasiṣṭha: accompanies Daśaratha to Mithilā for weddings, 120; addressed by brahmans upon Daśaratha’s death, 203; among few who remain conscious in presence of Rāma Jāmadagnya, 126; ashram of, 104, 798–99; authority in matters of kingship, 217; befriends Viśvāmitra, 105, 117; born from pot of semen, 804; brahman ascetic, 799; brings queen mothers to reunion of sons, 244; consecrates Rāma along with other brahmans, 725; curses Mitrasaha, 813;—Nimi to be disembodied, 803;—Viśvāmitra, 108; Daśaratha instructs, to install Rāma as prince regent, 133; dispatches messengers to Rājaγṛha, 204; Durvāsas prophesies in ashram of, 798; enters semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803; explains origin of the world and lineage of Iksvākus, 251; enmity with Viśvāmitra, 11, 103–17; forces of, 251; excludes, 258;—consecrates, 801; sons of, 258;—to perform a sacrifice, 109; urges Bhaṣṭra to take personal responsibility for Daśaratha’s consecration, 136;—to perform Daśaratha’s funerary rites, 213;—of Daśaratha’s sons, 71; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802;—to perform sacrifice, 802;—curses, to be disembodied in return, 893; one of the seven seers, 728; orders arrangements for Daśaratha’s aśvamedha, 65–66;—Śabālā to produce elegant feast for Viśvāmitra and his army, 105; interprets omens, 125–26; leads brahmans in approving Daśaratha’s aśvamedha, 64;—the court and gurus to Nandigrāma, 257; limits curse of Mitrasaha, 813; names Daśaratha’s sons, 71; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802;—curses, to be disembodied in return, 893; one of the seven seers, 728; orders arrangements for Daśaratha’s aśvamedha, 65–66;—Śabālā to produce army, 106; performs ceremony of the wedding thread, 124;—cursing ceremony for Daśaratha’s four sons, 71;—Rāma’s rite of departure (mahāprāsthana), 853; purohita of Bharata, 203–6, 209, 212–14, 218–19, 225–26, 231, 235–36, 239, 243–44, 228, 238, 244, 248, 251, 253, 255, 257, 725;—of Daśaratha, 52, 60, 62–66, 68, 71–73, 75, 120–26, 133, 136–37, 339, 798–99;—of Iksvākus, 121, 804;—of the Iksvākus, 64, 75, 135, 203, 214;—of Mitrasaha, 812–13;—of Rāma,723–25, 810–11, 820–21, 837, 841, 850–51, 853;—of Triśāṇku, 109–10, 541; rākṣaṣa in guise of cook, offers, human flesh, 813; rākṣaṣa in the form of, demands meat, 812;—rebuffs Triśāṇku, 109; receives new body, 804;—of Daśaratha to Janaka, 121–22; refusals to give up Śabālā, 105; reminds Daśaratha of necessity of honoring promise to Viśvāmitra, 75; renders useless weapon-spells of Viśvāmitra, 10, 108; requests new body from Brahmana, 803; Śabāla as wish-fulfilling cow of, 105–6;—of Triśāṇku, 109—of the forces of, 251–52;—of Daśaratha to Janaka, 121–22; refuses to give up Śabālā, 105; reminds Daśaratha of necessity of honoring promise to Viśvāmitra, 75; renders useless weapon-spells of Viśvāmitra, 10, 108; requests new body from Brahmana, 803; Śabāla as wish-fulfilling cow of, 105–6; sends messengers to bring Bharata and Śatrughna back to Ayodhya, 204; son of Brahman, 802–3; sons of, curse Triśāṇku, 110; rebuffs Triśāṇku, 109; tells Rāma not to displease subjects, 851; Triśāṇku approaches sons of, 109; —appeals to sons of, 109;—asks, to perform a sacrifice, 109; urges Bharata to accept kingship, 52, 209, 218;—Bharata to undergo consecration, 218;—execution of Lakṣmana, 850;—Rāma to accept kingship, 252–53; visits ashram of Bharadvāja, 225–26; Viśvāmitra demands that, address him as “brahman.” 117;—destroys ashram of, 107;—tries to take wish-fulfilling cow of, by force, 106;—tries to trade for Śabālā, 105–6;—welcomes Viśvāmitra, 104

Vasu: founder of Girivraja, 84; Nṛga consecrates, 801; son of Kuśa, 84

Vasudā (gandharva woman): wife of Mālin, 734

Vāsudeva. See Viṣṇu

Vasudhā (earth goddess), 734; Rāma rages against, 843. See also Dharanī; Mādhavī Vāsuki (serpent lord), 594, 690; dwells in Bhogavati, 299, 401, 760; gods and demons use as rope for churning, 97; Rāvana conquers, 299, 545, 760

Vasus (class of deities), 280, 316, 380, 403, 455, 481, 564, 709, 725, 768, 769, 770, 772, 842

Vātāpi: Agastya kills, 312; Agastya kills Ilvala and, 276; as demon ram, 275–76; and Ilvala kill brahmans, 275–76; story of, 275–76, 312

vat of oil: preservation of bodies in, 202, 822

For general queries, contact webmaster@press.princeton.edu
Vāyu (god of wind) (Mātariśvan, Pavana), 46, 75, 525, passim; assists Hanumān in leapin of ocean, 432; blocks all creatures' vital functions, 784; Brahmā and gods propitiate, 784–85; Brahmā and, in story of Hanumān's birth, 784–85; deprives worlds of breaths, 785; divine father of Hanumān, 426, 783, passim; dwells in all beings, 84, 784; gives Rāma golden and pearl necklaces at Indra's command, 725–26; friendship of, with Maināka, 519; gods propitiate, 426; Hanumān invokes, 429; Hanumān son of, passim; ordered to enter Śiva's semen, 88; as prāna, 84–85; prostrates himself before Brahmā, 785; seduces and is rejected by Kuśa, 744; of, 8; Brahmrāṇa, 519, 786; boards the Puṣpaka, 56, 713; one of seven immortals (cīrājīvins), 31, 742; only virtuous child of Kaikasi, 30, 741; orders area of Sītā's

vedas, 39, 57, 59, passim; according, Manu bore brahmans, kṣatriyas, viśyās, and śūdras, 280; bow of Śiva consist of, 646; Brahmā primordial knower of, 785; Janaka well-versed in, 65; rākṣasa brahmans know, 463; Rāma well-versed in, 51, 72, 482, 484, 561; is ordnance of, 709; Rāmāyana is equal to, 54; Rṣyārīga learned in, 68; social classes first alluded to in, 40; Sumālin, Mālyavān, and Mālin learned in, 736; take form of brahmans, 853; Tṛṇabindu's daughter overhears recitation of, 730

Vedaśrutī (river), 181

Vedavatī: ascends to heaven, 753; asceticism of, 752–53; birth of, 753; enters the sacrificial fire, 753; Rāvana seduces, 753; reborn as Sītā, 753; Sītā as reincarnation of, 21, 753–54; story of, 752–54; truth—act of, 16, 753

vedic gods: incarnate themselves as monkeys, 10, 70–71; plead with Viṣṇu to incarnate, 10, 68–69. See also gods verbal abuse of Sītā by Rāma, 15

verse: śloka type of, 8, 39, 55, 391

Vibhāṅḍaka (son of Kāśyapa, father of Rṣyāśṛīga), 61–62

Vibhīṣaṇa (brother of Rāvana), 15, 42, 26, passim; accompanies Rāma to Ayodhyā, 715–17; advises against hostilities, 547–548;—Rāma to prepare army to fight Kumbhakarṇa, 614;—Rāma to solicit aid of Samudra, 553;—Rāvana to return Sītā, 547–48; alliance of with Rāma, 5, 15, 56, 551–52, 702; alone can see invisible Indrajit, 585; Anala minister of, 573; Anālā eldest daughter of, 489; anointed as de jure king of the rākṣasas, 552, 561; as anomalous rākṣasa, 5, 284; assures monkeys that Rāma and Laksmana are still alive, 591; austerities of 742, 765, 742; balks at performing funerary rites for Rāvana, 702; begs righteousness as boon from Brahmā, 743;—birth of, 28–29, 741; boards the Puṣpaka with his ministers, 715; boons of, 743; Brahmā grants, immortality, 743; brings Sītā to Rāma, 705–6; brother of Rāvana, 24, 31, 489, 548, 664, 677, 741, passim; cannot kill Indrajit, 668; character synopsis of, 30–31; consecration of, as king of Laṅkā, 15, 53, 553, 702–3; consoles ṛākṣasa women 702; conveys Rāma's instruction to Sītā, 705; declares the killing of Sītā to be illusion, 660; defects to Rāma's camp, 15, 549, 578; denied permission to follow Rāma to heavenly world, 31, 553; dissuades Rāvana from executing Hanumān, 512–13; distraught at sight of bodies of Rāma and Laksmana, 591; does not deviate from righteousness, 742; enters inner apartments of Rāvana to find Sītā, 705; expects unconscious Rāma and Laksmana, to revive, 586; expresses concern to Rāvana, 764; fights Mitraghnā, 581; fraternal conflict of, with Rāvana, 26; Hanumān and Sugriva question, about means of crossing ocean, 552–53; Hanumān and, find Jāmbavān among dead and wounded, 643; has Sītā mount palanquin, 705; holds a fly-whisk at consecration of Rāma, 724–25; honors monkeys with gifts, 714–15; identifies ṛākṣasa warriors for Rāma, 603–4; Indrajit pierces with a hundred arrows, 666;—reviles, as a traitor, 664;—shoots with five arrows, 669; informs Rāvana of abduction of Kumbhānasī (2), 765; invites Rāma to stay in Laṅkā, 713; Jāmbavān asks, why, inquires only about Hanumān, 643; justifies his abandonment of Rāvana, 664; Kaikasi mother of, 741; kills Rāvana's chariot horses, 686; Laksmana intervenes to save, 686; marries Sāramā, 747; as metaphor for treason, 31; ministers of, gather intelligence on Laṅkā and its forces, 573;—, taking form at will as birds, 18, 573; monkeys debate whether to trust, capture, or kill, 549–51;—mistaking, for Indrajit, flee, 590–91; narrates the history of Kumbhakarṇa, 613; offers Rāma bath and ointments, 713;—Rāma the use of the Puṣpaka, 56, 713; one of seven immortals (cīrājīvins), 31, 742; only virtuous child of Kaikasi, 30, 741; orders area of Sītā's
passage cleared of moneys, apes and rākṣasas,705–6;—Sitā come in full view of the public, 706; paragon of virtue through devotion to Viṣṇu, 30; performs funerary rites for Rāvana, 702; points out banyan tree where Indrajit performs sacrifices, 663–64; points out Indrajit’s sacrificial ground to Lakṣmaṇa, 664–65; Praghasa minister of, 573; prevents execution of Hanumān, 512, 523; questions wounded Jāmbavān, 643; rallies monkey army, 586, 590; Rāma accepts gifts from, 703;—declines hospitality of, 714;—gives gifts to, 788;—grants refuge to, and ministers, 551–52;—honors, 575;—instructs, to perform funerary rites for Rāvana, 30, 701–2;—orders Lakṣmaṇa to anoint, as king of rākṣasas, 553;—orders to bring Sitā, 705;—orders to rule Lakṣaṇa, 789, 853;—reproaches for clearing area of spectators, 706;—summons, to aśvame-dha, 838;—tells, he will live on as lord of the rākṣasas, 853; Rāvana exorcizes as traitor, 31, 548;—falsely tells Sitā that, was captured, 565;—regrets not heeding advice of, 629;—regrets treatment of, 629; reassures Rāma that Sitā cannot have been killed, 660;—Sugriva and monkeys, 642; rebukes Rāvana, 548, 764; rejoices at death of Indrajit, 671; reports the death of Indrajit to Rāma, 672;—to Rāma on Lakṣaṇa’s defensive preparations and forces, 31, 573, 603; reviles Indrajit, 664–65; as righteous advisor of Rāvana, 305; as righteous rākṣa, 5, 30, 284, 512, 742, 765; roams the gory battlefield with Hanumān at night, 642–43; Sampāṭi minister of, 573; Śarabha minister of, 573; Saramā wife of, 747; says Indrajit will become visible once his army is annihilated, 662;—sacrifice affords Indrajit his invisibility, 660–61; sends ministers to spy on Rāvana’s defensive arrangements, 573; slaughters rākṣasas with arrows, 667–68; speaks truth to power, 30; stationed at central encampment, 574; stations monkeys at gates of Lakṣaṇa, 577; suggests telling frightened monkeys that Kumbhakarṇa is a mechan-ical man, 614; Sugriva reassures, 591; Susena heals, of wounds, 672; takes refuge (sāraṇam) with Rāma, 31, 549, 551–52; tells despondent monkeys that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are not dead, 642; —Lakṣmaṇa he must stop Indrajit from completing his sacrifice, 660, 664;—monkeys that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are still alive, 586; tells Rāma about Atikāya, 636;—Rāma of Kumbhakarṇa’s history and Brahmā’s curse, 613–614;—Rāvaṇa of abduction of Kumbhinaśi, 764;—Sitā to do exactly as Rāma says, 70;—Sitā to do exactly as Rāma says, 705; as traitor, 31, 548, 664; unmaskś Śuka and Sārāṇa, 556, 562; urges Lakṣmaṇa to attack Indrajit before his sacrifice is completed, 662;—Lakṣmaṇa to kill Indrajit, 666, 668;—on monkeys, 668;—Rāma to abandon grief, 660;—Rāma to send Lakṣmaṇa to kill Indrajit, 660–61;—Rāvana to return Sitā, 489, 547–49, 660; Viśravas exempts, from curse, 29, 741; Viśravas father of, 28–29, 741; vows to help kill the rākṣasas and assault Lakṣāṇa, 552; warns Rāvaṇa of his impending death at Lakṣmaṇa’s hands, 664–65; weeps for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 591; wishes to attend Rāma’s consecra-tion, 715

Vidhāṭr (the arranger), 158, 278

Vidyujjihva (dānava), 29, 33, 746; power of illusion of, 564; produces simulacra of Rāma’s head and bow, 564–68; Rāvaṇa kills, 29, 763; Rāvaṇa marries Śūrpaṇa-kāhā to, 746

Vidyunmālin: Suśena fights and kills, 581–82

Vidyutkeśa: birth of, 732; Sālakaṭāṇkāṭā wife of, 732

Vijaya (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204

Vinata (monkey): leader of eastern search party, 398, 407; failure of, to find Sitā, 409

Vinatā (1): mother of Garuḍa and Aruṇa, 280–81 sons of, go by highest path in sky, 419

Vinatā (2) (rākṣas woman): taunts Sitā, 471

Vindhyā (mountain[s]), 394; Hanumān sweats by, 489; obeys Agastya, 276; Sampāṭi falls to, 422

violence: Sitā warns Rāma to abjure, 271–72

Virādhā (dānava or rākṣas), 627; abducts Sitā, 12, 265–67; asks Rāma to bury in grave, 267; boon of, from Brahmā, 266; burial of, 267;—recalled, 719; Kuber Viśravāna curses, 32, 266–67; parentage of, 266 (see also Jaya; Śatārahādā; Lakṣmaṇa breaks right arm of, 266; Rāma breaks right arm of, 266; Rāma kills and frees from curse, 52, 266–67;—recalled, 719; Rāma kills recalled, 460, 474, 564, 677, 697, 716, 719; story of 265–67

Virgil, 3

Virocana: Mantharā daughter of, 79; Mrtyu vows to kill, 759

Virūpākṣa (field marshal of Rāvana), 443; Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3
Virūpākṣa (minister of Rāvana), 729, 744, 769; son of Mālyāvān, 734
Virūpākṣa (one of the elephants who support the earth), 92
Virūpākṣa (rākṣasa hero), 683, 715, 728; Rāvana sends forth to battle, 678; Sugriva fights and kills, 680–81
Virūpākṣa (son of Rāvana), 547; Lakṣmaṇa fights and kills, 581; Rāvana stations in central camp, 572, 573
Viśālā (city), 97, 99, 103
Viṣṇu (Govinda, Hari, Hṛṣīkeśa, Janārdana, Keśava, Madhusūdana, Nārāyaṇa, Upendra, Vāsudeva): Agastya gives Rāma bow of, 278; agrees to gods’ plea to incarnate, 10; arrow is primordial body of, 817; asks Brahmā to grant heavenly worlds to devotees, 854;—gods the means of killing Rāvana, 69; battles rākṣasas (Hari), 737–38, 740;—Śīva, 127; Bharata as one quarter of, 71; bound by ties of affection to Vṛtra, 831; bow of, 126–28, 278, 295–96; Brahmā calls Rāma, 844, 849, 854;—exhorts Rāma to recall his nature as, 844;—exhorts to return with brothers to essential Viṣṇuva form, 854;—instructs gods to take on various forms to aid, 70;—reveals to Rāma that he is, in his manifold forms, 709–10; Buddha as avatāra (incarnation) of, 21; chooses Daśaratha as father, 69; conch of, 403, 735, 737–40; creates Brahma, 849;—Madhu and Kaiṭabha, 849; curse of Nṛga to end at arrival of, in Kṛṣṇa incarnation (Vāsudeva), 801; declines to kill Vṛtra, 831; discus of, 299, 403; as divinity of Hinduism, 4; divine arrow of, 127–28, 810, 817; drives rākṣasas from Laṅkā, 732; dwarf incarnation of, 81–82; essence of, divided between Daśaratha’s sons, 70–71; fights and kills Mālin, 738–39; gods appeal to, for means of reviving Indra, 832;—ask, to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735;—perform āsvamedha to, for Indra, 833; plead with, to incarnate, 10, 68–69;—request, to end incarnation, 19;—set task for, to take fourfold incarnation to destroy Rāvana, 69;—worship Lakṣmaṇa as fourth part of, 851; history of discus of, 403; horn bow of, 737–38; ignorant of his own divine nature, 10; avatāra (incarnation) of, to kill Rāvana, 10; Indra appeals to, to kill Vṛtra, 831;—requests, to kill Rāvana, 768; intended husband of Vedavati, 753; javelin of Mālyāvān pierces, 740; judged greater than Śīva, 127; Kāla as son of, 849–50; Kausalyā meditates on, 135 (Janārdana);—worships, 152; Kausalyā meditates on, 135; kills Bhṛgu’s wife, 79;—dānava Hayagriva on Cakravān, 403;—Paṇacajana on Cakravān, 403;—Mālin (Hari), 739; Kṛṣṇa as avatāra (incarnation) of, 35, 40; Lakṣmaṇa recalls he is an inconceivable portion of, 608;—returns to his state as quarter of, 851;—and Śatrughna infused with portions of, 71; Māyā is immemorial consort of, 854; Nārada’s account of Rāma story makes no explicit reference to Rāma as avatāra (incarnation) of, 9; nature of, is to protect all beings, 849; paralyzes Śīva, 127; pierces Mālyāvān with javelin (Govinda), 740; plans to divide himself into three parts, 831; pleading of vedic gods with, to incarnate, 10; Prahlāda asura devotee of, 30; as “preserver” in the Hindu “trinity,” 34; promises to kill Rāvana and son, 768;—to kill sons of Sukeśa (Janārdana), 735–36; rākṣasas abandon Laṅkā in fear of, 731, 740, 744;—believe Rāma is incarnation of, 571–72; Rāma as Hṛṣīkeśa, 709; as incarnation of, 4, 11;—as mighty as, 51;—as one-half of, 71;—enters with brothers into blazing energy of, 854;—glorifies, 137;—and Śitā sleep in sanctuary of, 137;—as slayer of Madhu (Madhusūdana), 128, 709; as Upendra, “younger brother of Indra”, 709; Rāma Jāmadagnya (Parāṣurāma) as avatāra (incarnation) of, 11, 21;—has bow of, 127;—recognizes Rāma as, 128; Rāvana believes, not equal to him, 753; refuge of the worlds, 854; refuses to kill Rāvana, 768;—Vṛtra, 831; sacrificial post of, 114; sets mind on human incarnation, 849; sets term of incarnation, 849; Śīva tells god to seek refuge with, 735; sleeping of (Keśava), 383; as Supreme Being, 400, 403; takes birth to slaughter rākṣasas, 740; three strides of, 400, 418, 424, 426–27, 468, 620; unlike most incarnations of, Rāma remains on earth for long time, 21; role of, in Sagara story (Vāsudeva), 92–93; Vibhiṣaṇa as one of few demon devotees of, 30; wishes to kill Rāvana, 849; vows to kill rākṣasas (Hari), 736 yogic power of illusion of, 82 Viṣravas (brahman sage): agnihotra rite of, 28, 741; birth of, 730; curses children, 28–29, 741;—Kaikasi, 29, 741; Devavar-ṇini wife of, 730; exempts Vibhiṣaṇa from curse, 29; father of Kubera Vaiśravana, 730;—of Kumbhakarna, 28–29, 740–41;—of Rāvana, 28–29, 740–41; of Śūpaṇakhā, 741;—of Vibhiṣaṇa, 28–29,
740–41; Kaikasi wife of, 28; son of Pulastya, 28, 730; tells Kubera to abandon Lāṅkā and found a city on Kailāśa, 745
Viśvācī (gandharva woman), 227
Viśvādevas, 158, 768, 842
viśvajit rite, 68
Viśvakarman: artisan of the gods, 734, 747; Bharadvaja invites, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; builds dwelling for Kubera, 399, 405;—dwelling of Varuṇa on western mountain, 403;—Lāṅka, 419, 437, 715, 731, 734;—palace for Agastyā, 401;—palaces, 457;—residence for Garuḍa (Vainateya), 399;—sleeping chamber for Kumbhakarṇa 747;—creates ornament Agastyā gives to Rāma, 824; fashions a discus, 403; father of Nala, 15, 554; grants boon to Hanumāṇ, 786;—to Nala, 554, 564; tells rākṣasas about Lāṅkā, 734
Viśvaksena, 709
Viśvāmitra: acknowledged as a royal-seer, 109; asham of, attacked by Mārīca, 32, 82–83;—recalled, 305; asks Daśāratha to send Rāma to kill rākṣasas, 10, 71–75, 305; attains preeminence among seers, 115;—worlds to which royal seers aspire, 109; attends Rāma's sacrifice, 841; austerities of, 107–17, 841; becomes a brahman-seer, 41, 103, 116–17;—recalled, 72; becomes a seer, 114; conflict of, with Vasiṣṭha, 104–17; creates new constellations, 112; curses Mahodaya and Vasiṣṭha's sons, 111;—own sons, 114; Rambhā, 116–18; Daśāratha tries to go back on his word to, 73–74; Daśāratha's aid requested by, 305; departs from Mithilā, 125; enmity of, with Vasiṣṭha, 11, 103–17; enraged at Daśāratha's turnabout, 75; genealogy of, 103; Gṛhṭacī seduces, 392; gives the Balā and Atibalā mantras to Rāma, 76;—mantras to Rāma, 76;—weapon-spears and recovery mantras for Kṛṣṇāśvas to Rāma, 80–81; Indra urges, to confer the weapon-spears, sons of Kṛṣṇāśva, 79; instructs Rāma to kill Tātakā, 78–79;—Rāma to save Ahalyā from Gautama's curse, 101; knows how to use divine weapon-spears (astras), 75; Lakṣmāna accompanies Rāma on journey with, 9, 75–102; Menakā infatuates 115; narrates history of Kāma's asham and Śiva's burning of Kāma, 76–77;—history of Malada and Karuṣa and the story of Tātakā, 77–78;—stories of various places they pass through, 10, 56, 108;—story of churning of the ocean of milk for nectar of immortality (amṛta), and ensuing war between daityas and ādīyas, 97–98;—story of Diti, Indra and the birth of the Mārutas, 97–99;—story of Indra, Gautama and Ahalyā, 100–101;—story of Kuśa-nābha's daughters and his own lineage, 84–86;—story of Lake Mānasa and the origin of the Sarayū river, 77;—story of the Ashram of the Perfected Being, 81–82;—story of the Dwarf incarnation of Viṣṇu, 81–82;—story of the founding of Viśāla and the lineage of Sumati, 99;—story of the marriage of Śiva and Umā and the birth of Kārtikeya, 87–90;—story of the sons of Sagarā, the digging of ocean, descent of the Ganges, 90–97; one of the seven seers, 728; performs sacrifice for Triṣaṅku, 111–12; purohitas of, unnamed, 105; Rāma accompanies, to Mithilā, 10, 83;—protects sacrifice of, 10, 82–83; Rambhā seduces, 115–16; receives divine weapons from Śiva, 107; reports the reiation of Ahalyā and Gautama to Śatānanda, 103; as royal-seer, 105;—recalled, 72; sacrifice of, rākṣas disrupts, 10, 73–74. 82–83;—lasts for ten nights, 73;—Rāma guards for six nights, 82; sets out with Rāma and Lakṣmāna, 75; Śiva grants weapon-spears to, 107; son of Gādhī, 72, 104–5, 108; sons of, 107; story of career of, 11, 103–7; story of, and Menakā, 115; story of, and Rambhā, 116–18; story of, and Śunāhsepa, 113–14; story of, and Triṣaṅku 110, 111–12; takes Rāma and Lakṣmāna to Mithilā to see Janaka's bow, 10–11, 83–108, 118–19; weapon-spears of, divine weapons of, 108; Vasiṣṭha befriends, 117;—renders useless weapon-spears of, 10, 108; visits Daśāratha, 63–64; vital glow: as sign of life, 586, 589, 824 Viṭaṇḍavati (capital city of Kubera), 439, 650 Vivasvanta. See Śūryā
vow: of Aṅgada to fast to death, 414, 416; of Aśjān, 426; of Bhagirath, 95–96; of the Bhārgavas, 126; of Bharata, 224, 253, 383, 810; of Bṛguc's wife, 79; of Daśāratha, 169, 719; of great sages, 77; of Hanumāṇ, 853; of Indraji, 640; of Janaka, 119–20; of Kākutsthas, 125; of Kausalyā, 152; of Kubera, 748; of Pārvati, 87; of Rāma and Lakṣmāna, 186; of Rāma, 248, 283, 317, 335, 477, 484, 511, 552–553, 588, 689, 699, 703, 706, 711; of Rāma to slay Vālin, 359, 361; of Rāma and Sītā, 135; of Rāvana, 591, 742, 773; of Śatyavati, 86; of Sītā,
Vṛtra, 736, 759, 768, 764, passim; aśvamedha sacrifice of, 832–33; austerities of, 831; Indra kills, with vajra, 831–32; story of Indra and, 830–32
vulture(s): fifth path in sky, that of, 419. See also Jatāyus; Sampāti

water-offerings: to ancestors, 76, 87, 241, 242, 283, 379, 419, 420; of Rāvana, 758; known as samvarta, 846. See also funerary libations
weapon(s), 582, 584–85, 594, 601, 603, 647, 663, 675, 679, 685, 696; as a means of suicide, 454; of fourteen thousand rākṣasas, 292–93; of monkeys, 525; of Rāma to kill golden deer, 312. See also arrow(s); bow(s); discus; javelin(s); lance(s); serpent-eapons; sword; Glossary of Weapons
weapon-spells (astras), 775; of Agni, 606, 639, 685, 689; of asuras, 685; of Brahmā, 482, 493, 523, 639, 641–42, 654, 655, 661; of gandharvas, 676, 685; of Garuḍa, 690; of gods, 689; of Indra, 628, 670; of Indrajit, 584, 764; known as samvarta, 846; of Paśupati (Śiva), 758; Rāma receives from Viśvāmitra, 10; Rāvana as master of, 738; of Rudra (Śiva), 626, 684; Samhāras know how to use, 75; of Śiva (Paśupati), 764; Śiva gives to Viśvāmitra, 107; sons of Kēśāśva as, 75; of Śvērya, 639, 685; thwart each other, 698; Vasiṣṭha renders useless, of Viśvāmitra, 108; of Vāyu, 627; of vidyādharas called Nandana, 80; Viśvāmitra gives, to Rāma, 10, 80–81;—knows how to use, 75; of Yama, 639
western quarter: description of, 402–4; dispatching of search party to, 402–4, 407; Suśeṇa, leader of, search party, 400, 407
western search party: dispatching of, to western quarter, 402–4; failure of, to find Sītā, 409; Suśeṇa as leader of, 400, 407
widow(s): Daśaratha’s wives as, 245; exile of king leave earth, 183, 213, 222, 245; Kaikēyī must live as, 175, 244; Laṅkā to become a city of, 329, 474; rākṣasa women as, 676, 700; Sītā does not have the signs of, 588;—should not be, 588;—thinks she is, 566; Śūrpanakhā as, 33, 763; Tārā as, 374, 377; wives of Vālīn as, 379; women abducted by women as, 762; women never become in Rāma’s kingdom, 54, 727
wife/wives: commander of army as, 425; description of consorts of Rāvana and, 29–30, 446–50; of Daśaratha, fasting of, 223;—reunited with him in heaven, 845; of Vālīn lament, 374–75;—fast to death of, 375
wind: ceases to blow during battle between Rāma and Rāvana, 697
wind god. See Vāyu
wine: ādityas accept, 98; asuras do not accept, 98; flower, 451; of the gods, 761; madhu, 390; maireya, 105, 227, 229, 390, 791
winter. See rainy season
woman/women: abducted by Rāvana, 16, 29, 30; abducted by Rāvana curse him, 763; asceticism of, 797 (see also Anasūyā; asceticism; austerities; Śābari; Sītā; Śva-yamprabhā; Vedavātī); dharma of, 157–58, 161, 162–63, 172, 197, 109, 260; dress and anoint Sītā, 705; inner apartments of (see inner apartments); Laṅkā compared to, 437–38, 440; obedience of, to husbands, 158, 260; prohibition on killing, 215; propriety of, performing sandhyā rituals, 458; Rāvana abducts, 62–63; in Vālmiki’s ashram, 797. See also aparsaras(es); rākṣasa women; Rāvana: wives and courtesans of, described; yakṣa woman/women
women’s quarters. See inner apartments
world guardian(s) (lokapāla(s)), 131, 156, 280, 725; Brahmā makes Kubera, 731; Indra as, 731; Kubera as, Rāvana subjugates, 545; Rāvana threatens to send to abode of Yama, 748; Varuna as, 731, 804

Yadu: and Yayāti, 805–7; son of Yayāti and Devayāni, 805; Yayāti curses to father yātrudhānas, 807; Yayāti loves than Pūru, 805
yajña (sacrifice[s]), 40. See also sacrifice(s)
Yajñakopa (rākṣasa), 547; Rāma fights, 581; son of Mālayāvan, 734
Yajñāsatri (rākṣasa), 291; Rāma strikes, 583
yakṣa(s), 68–69, 74–75, 78, passim; Brahmā creates, 732; creatures of the night, 87; etymology of word, 732; Kubera king of, 405; Kubera lives on Kailāsa surrounded by, 545; Rāvana battles Kubera Vaśravāna and, on Kailāsa, 749–51; Viṣṇu tells gods to father sons on, 70. See also Māṇibhadra/Māṇicara; Samyodhakaṇṭaka; Suketu; Śūryabhānu
yakṣa woman/women, 734; Rāvana abducts, 762–63 See also Tāṭakā
Yama (god of death): becomes a crow, 754; Brahmā protects Rāvaṇa from, 760; grants boon to Hanumān, 786; king of ancestors, 757; Mrtyu accompanies, in battle against Rāvaṇa, 759–60; must not falsify word of Brahmā, 760; Nārada warns of Rāvaṇa’s intentions, 757–58; Rāvaṇa fights, 757–60; regent of southern quarter, 292, 403; rewards crow, 755; vanishes from Rāvaṇa’s sight, 760; Vātāpi goes to house of, 276; vows to kill Rāvaṇa, 759–60; weapon-sells of, 639; as world guardian, 731.

See also Dharmaśraja; Kāla; Kṛtānta; Mrtyu; Vaiśavātā

Yaśu (river), 17, 18, 35, 146, 188, 206, 256, 398, 716, 718, 817, passim; Laṅgaṇa harasses sages who live near, 807–8; Rāma crosses, 190; Śatrughna camps on banks of, 814; Śatrughna. crosses, 815; water for Rāma’s consecration brought from confluence of, with Ganges, 146

yātudhāna[s] (type of rākṣasa): Aṅgada allows, to capture him, 579; battle monkeys, 605, 625, 631; central encampment of Rāvaṇa garrisoned by, 539; described, 441–42; Khaṇḍa has army of, 290, 292; engage in vedic recitation, 440; wake up Kumbhakaṇṭha, 610

Yavadvipa (island), 399

Yavanās (peoples), 106; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107

Yavanās (region): located in northern quarter, 404

Yāyāti: and Yadu, 805–7; consecrates Pūru, 807; curses Yadu to father yātudhānas, 807; Devayāni disfavored wife of, 805; enters ashram, 807; exchanges old age with son Pūru, 805–7; Indra and, 339; Pūru younger son of, 805–7; son of Nahusa, ascends to Indra’s world, 339; story of 805–7; Uśanas Kāvyas curses, 806, 807

Yogavasiṣṭhamahārāmāyaṇa, 41 younger brother: Lakṣmana as ideal of, 5, 21

Yuddhākāṇḍa, 537–727; descriptions of battles in, 15; longest kāṇḍa, 15; synopsis of, 15–16

Yudhājit: army of, battles gandharvas, 846–47; Bharata’s maternal uncle, 124, 206–7, 845–46; desires to conquer the country of the gandharvas, 845–46; dispatches Gārya as messenger, 845–46; king of Keśa and Bharata’s maternal uncle, 130; son of king of Keśa, 124; takes Bharata and Śatrughna to his home, 130

yuga(s): determined by the balance of righteousness and unrighteousness, 571; in Hinduism, 4, 32, 37–38; Nārada’s account of, 821–22; theory of righteousness (dharma) in, 37–38, 821–22; Vedavati born in Kṛṣṇa, 753–54; Vedavati reborn as Sitā in Tretā, 753–54. See also Dvāpara Yuga; Kali Yuga; Kṛtā Yuga; Tīṣya; Tretā Yuga

Yupākṣa (minister of Rāvaṇa): informs Kumbhakarna of the Lāhkā’s siege, 612

Yūpākṣa (Rāvaṇa’s field marshal): Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3

yuvarāja (heir-apparent/prince regent), 11, 46